lifornia
onal
ity

David Bickerstaff Bertha 18

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/moderntraveller30condiala

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER.

VOLUME THE THIRTIETH.

BRAZIL AND BUENOS AYRES.

VOL. II.

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER.

A

DESCRIPTION,

GEOGRAPHICAL, HISTORICAL, AND TOPOGRAPHICAL,

OF THE

VARIOUS COUNTRIES OF THE GLOBE.

IN THIRTY VOLUMES.

By JOSIAH CONDER.

VOLUME THE THIRTIETH.

LONDON:

JAMES DUNCAN, 37, PATERNOSTER-ROW.

MDCCCXXX.

LONDON:
Printed by W. CLOWES,
Stamford-street.

CONTENTS

OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

	PAGE
PROVINCE OF MINAS GERAES	1
FROM THE FRONTIER TO VILLA RICA	5
FROM SANTO PAULO TO VILLA RICA	11
DESCRIPTION OF A BRAZILIAN CAMPO	24
ST. JOAM D'EL REY	28
VILLA RICA	44
GOLD MINES OF VILLA RICA	51
MARIANNA	60
ENVIRONS OF VILLA RICA EASTWARD	67
TOPAZ MINES OF CAPAO	69
LEAD MINES OF CUJABEIRA	73
CHAPEL OF CONGONHAS	75
EXCURSION TO SERRA CARACA	79
FROM VILLA RICA TO TEJUCO	85
DIAMOND DISTRICT	96
COMARCA OF PARACATU	102
COMARCA OF SABARA	104
PROVINCE OF GOYAZ	107
PROVINCE OF MATTO GROSSO	116
PROVINCE OF ESPIRITO SANTO	130
PROVINCE OF PORTO SEGURO	148
THE BOTUCUDOES	172
PROVINCE OF BAHIA	184

PAGE
BAHIA 192
FROM ILHEOS TO MINAS GERAES 213
PROVINCE OF SEREGIPE D'EL REY..... 223
PROVINCE OF PERNAMBUCO..... 226
PROVINCE OF PARAIBA 258
PROVINCE OF RIO GRANDE D'EL NORTE..... 262
PROVINCE OF SEARA 268
PROVINCE OF PIAUHY..... 274
PROVINCE OF MARANHAM 278
PROVINCE OF PARA 287
PROVINCES OF SOLIMOENS AND GUIANA 293

BUENOS AYRES.

BOUNDARIES OF THE VICEROYALTY 303
DESCRIPTION OF THE CITY..... 306
HISTORY OF THE COLONY OF BUENOS AYRES 307

THE

MODERN TRAVELLER,

ETC. ETC.

BRAZIL.

MINAS GERAES.

We now enter upon one of the most important provinces of Brazil, the auriferous regions of Minas Geraes (General Mines), in the heart of which the Marquis Pombal would have placed the new capital of the Portuguese empire, which he projected to transfer to the western hemisphere. In some respects, St. Joâo d'el Rey would be a more advantageous position for the capital of Brazil, than Rio. It is more central, and, in the event of foreign invasion or attacks, more secure. Guarded by the mountains which form a natural barrier, its elevated plains would seem to be the very place for the King of Diamonds to hold his court. One prominent objection is the want of good roads; but, perhaps, there is another objection more insuperable behind. Good roads would make the forbidden districts too accessible, and the residence of the court in any part of the province would attract too large a population to the neighbourhood.

Minas Geraes is the most mountainous province in the empire. The Serra Mantiqueira, which divides it from the provinces of Rio and St. Paulo on the south, commencing in the northern part of the latter province,

runs almost north-east, "not without many windings," as far as the town of Barbazena, in the comarca of St. Joâo d'el Rey; it then inclines northward to the extremity of the province, varying its elevation and name. Its most elevated head, called *Itaculumc* (the child of stone), is reckoned the highest in the province. On the north, it is separated from Bahia and Pernambuco by the rivers Verde and Carynhenha; on the east, it is bounded by part of Bahia, Porto Seguro, and Espiritu Santo; and, on the west, by Goyaz. Its extreme length from north to south is about 600 miles, extending from lat. 13° to 21° 10′ south; its width about 350 miles.* The climate is temperate, compared with others in the torrid zone, owing to the elevation of its table land; and none of the provinces abound more with rivers and mountain torrents. The greater part of these have their origin in the Serra Mantiqueira, and are received by four general channels. Two of these flow eastward, namely, the Rio Doce and the Jequitinhonha; the former irrigating the comarca of Villa Rica, the latter that of Serro Frio. The St. Francisco has a northward course, watering the comarca of Sabara; while the Rio Grande, or Para, takes a westward direction, after receiving the Rio das Mortes, which gave its former name to the comarca of St. Joâo d'el Rey. The division of the province into these four comarcas was first made in the year 1714. Cazal, indeed, states, that Minas Geraes was not created a province till six years later, being included, up to 1720, in the capitania of St. Paulo.

* Mr. Henderson says, (we presume, on the authority of Cazal,) that it is nearly 400 miles long, by 280 of medium width, extending from 15° 30′ to 21° 40′; but his own map contradicts this statement. Mr. Mawe speaks loosely, but more accurately, when he makes the capitania extend from 600 to 700 miles in length; but he considerably overrates its breadth, which he supposes to be nearly equal to its length.

The discovery of this portion of Brazil is ascribed to an intrepid adventurer named Sebastiam Fernandez Tourinho, an inhabitant of Porto Seguro, who, in 1573, proceeded with a party of adventurers, up the River Doce, and explored the country westward for three months, sometimes by land, sometimes by water; he penetrated as far as the Jequitinhonha, by which he descended to the coast, carrying with him specimens of the mineral riches of the country. These consisted, however, chiefly of emeralds, for the gold mines were not discovered for a century later. A few years afterwards, an individual named Adorno conducted an expedition, consisting of 150 whites and 400 Indians, up the Cricare to the emerald mines visited by Tourinho, returning by the same river as his predecessor; and a third adventurer is said to have subsequently penetrated still further. A hundred years after, some Paulistas of Thaubate first discovered gold in the comarca of Villa Rica, about thirty miles to the south of the present capital; and on their return, (about 1694,) a smelting-house was established at Thaubate. Tidings of this discovery soon spread, and a great number of Paulistas were induced to undertake expeditions in various directions, not, as hitherto, for the purpose of kidnapping the Indians, but in the still more animating pursuit of gold. Numerous rival establishments were formed in the province; and hence arose the feuds between the Thaubatenos and Piratininganos, who never associated in their mining enterprises. At length, the attention of Government was attracted to the golden discovery. Obstinate disputes had arisen between the Paulistas and the Portuguese, and the contest had assumed the character of a sanguinary civil war, when, in 1710, Don A. d'Albuquerque Coelho, the first governor-general of the province of St. Paulo, succeeded in suppressing these disorders. Villa Rica and Marianna were created towns in 1711; St. João

d'el Rey and Sabara in 1712; and Villa do Principe in 1714. In 1720, Don Lourenzo d'Almeyda was appointed the first governor-general of Minas Geraes. Up to 1808, the only circulating medium in this province is said to have been gold dust; but its circulation was then prohibited, and a paper currency has been substituted. In 1818, Villa Rica was declared the capital of Minar, as Villa Boa was made that of Goyaz, and Villa Bella of Matto Grosso.

Besides gold, the province contains platina, silver, copper, iron, lead, mercury, antimony, bismuth, fossil-coal, diamonds, emeralds, rubies, topazes, chrysolites, sapphires, agates, aqua-marinas, amethysts, and almost all the precious stones; also cotton, tobacco, sugar, wheat, maize, mandioc, coffee, indigo, ipecacuanha, columbo root, jalap, liquorice, vanilla, various gums, and Jesuits' bark. The population is computed at upwards of 600,000 souls, of whom nearly a fourth are slaves, the property of the miner and the agriculturist.* Indians are found only upon the eastern confines of the province, on the banks of the Rio Doce, or in the impenetrable forests of the *Serra do Mar*.

The travellers to whom we are chiefly indebted for our

* In 1776, according to documents cited by Mr. Southey, the province of Minas Geraes contained 319,769 inhabitants. In 1808, according to M. Von Eschwege, a German traveller, the population amounted to 433,049; of whom, 106,684 were whites, 129,656 free mulattoes, 47,937 free negroes, and 148,772 negro and mulatto slaves. In 1820, there were computed to be 456,675 free persons, and 165,210 slaves; total, 621,885; a very considerable increase, notwithstanding that, in the comarca of Villa Rica, the decrease of the gold-washing is supposed to have occasioned a decline in the population, which, in 1776, was computed at 78,618, and in 1813, at only 72,209 inhabitants. "With double the population," remarks Dr. Von Spix, "Minas has three and a half times as many negro slaves, and nine times as many free negroes as St. Paulo." See vol. i. p. 229.

information respecting this province, are Mr. Mawe, Mr. Luccock, and Drs. Von Spix and Martius. Mr. Mawe, in 1808, travelled from Rio to Villa Rica, and from thence as far northward as Tijuco, and the banks of the Jequitinhonha. Mr. Luccock, in 1817, took the route from Rio to St. Joâo d'el Rey, from which place he proceeded to Villa Rica, and returned by a partly different route to Rio, by Congonha and Barbazena. Dr. Von Spix, who visited Villa Rica about a year after, entered Minas Geraes from St. Paulo. We shall first avail ourselves of Mr. Mawe's account of the route

FROM THE FRONTIER TO VILLA RICA.

MENTION has already been made of the circumstances which led to Mr. Mawe's obtaining permission to explore the diamond mines of Serro do Frio.* On the 17th of August, 1809, he set out for Villa Rica, in company with an English merchant of the name of Goodall, and with an escort, provided by Government, of two men of the mining corps, which entitled him to the free use of such mules as he might require on the road. It was a journey which no Englishman had ever before undertaken; nor had any of his countrymen been hitherto permitted to pass the barrier of alpine mountains that stretch along the coast.

The route from Porto d'Estrella to the second register, on the banks of the Paraibuna, has already been described.† At rather more than a league's distance from

* See vol. i. p. 191.

† Vol. i. pp. 159—180. Mr. Mawe's *Moremim* is evidently the Inhomerim of Mr. Luccock; but it is not so easy to reconcile these two travellers on another point. Mr. Luccock describes the Paraibuna as issuing from the Serra Mantiqueira, and falling into the Paraiba on the northern bank. The second register, therefore, must be that on the banks of the former river. Mr. Mawe, on the

that river is Rosinha do Negro, a small village, situated, like all those, in this part of the country, which are connected with a large plantation, at the bottom of a deep hollow, and by the side of a small stream. About two leagues further is a third register, which bears the name of Mathias Barboza, by whom it was erected near the beginning of the last century. It is formed by mud walls, enclosing a large area, with a gateway at each end, through which the public road passes. On entering the first gate, travellers are required to deliver their passports for examination; and if any suspicion is excited, the mules are unloaded, and the cargoes undergo the strictest scrutiny. "It not unfrequently happens," says Mr. Mawe, "that a negro has been suspected of swallowing a diamond; in which case he is shut up in a bare room till the truth can be proved." The register of Mathias Barboza is the great toll-house of Minas Geraes. Every three months, it is required to remit the sum collected for duties to Villa Rica: the annual amount is stated by Mr. Luccock at about £25,000 sterling. Here it is usual for the traveller to exchange all his metallic money for the *bilhetes* (notes), which form, with the exception of a little copper and bars of gold, the only currency of the province. On quitting the province, he may again exchange these *bilhetes* at any of the registers, for those of the district on which he is entering.* The road, which lies through extensive tracts of wood, continues to ascend in a direction north-west by

contrary, calls the first register the "register of Paraibuna," and the second, the "register of Paraiba," giving the latter name to the second river.

* "Having arranged for a credit in the principal towns," says Mr. Luccock, "I had no business of this kind to transact, and would advise future travellers to do the same. Gold, being the produce of almost every part of the country, is seen in great abundance, both in dust and in bars; but, to prevent confusion respecting the royal claims, none is allowed to circulate as coin."

north, and there is a sensible change in the temperature. In some parts, the scenery reminded Mr. Luccock of the woody country near Sheffield, but "without its blackness, forges, and smoke." He noticed, for the first time, two kinds of heath, and among the trees, observed the pine and the common box-tree, the latter growing to the height of more than twelve feet. Great numbers of toucans and parroquets are seen, the former always flying singly, the latter in flocks. Mr. Mawe lodged at a fazenda called Maderas, beyond the register, which he computed to be 100 miles from Porto d'Estrella. The following day, pursuing his route over a chain of mountains, he passed several falls of the Paraibuna, and traversing a tract of woodland, arrived at the village of Juiz de Fora, containing a small chapel and a few poor houses. The Paraibuna, which runs close by, has dwindled greatly from its magnitude lower down, and flows with a rapid but unruffled current over a sandy bed. Near this place is the site of the first gold-washing: it is very small, and had been abandoned for many years. The auriferous sand is brought down by the floods, being evidently not in its natural bed. The surface of the country is, in general, a good strong clay; the rocks are of gneiss or granite. As the road continues to ascend, the trees are smaller, the heaths and ferns larger and more vigorous, and the air is fresh and cool, except between the hours of two and four P.M. The fazenda of Antonio Ferreira, (Mr. Luccock writes it Moreira,) is the next halting-place; a day's journey from that of Maderas.* Here are a *rancho* and a *venda;* but the house was in ruins in 1817. Mr. Luccock gives the following account of the circumstances which had occasioned the destruction of the establishment. "The proprietor, having offended a

* Mr. Luccock lodged, the preceding night, at a small place called St. Vincente.

powerful and vindictive neighbour, was charged by him with carrying on an illicit trade in gold dust. In the dead of the night, he found his house suddenly surrounded by a party of cavalry, by whom he was apprehended and conveyed to prison, where he died of a broken heart: his property was confiscated, and his family turned adrift. All his neighbours represented him as an industrious man who was growing wealthy, and agreed in asserting their belief that he was perfectly innocent of the offence laid to his charge. The ruined walls and many scattered fragments of agricultural implements, remained a monument of this atrocious act of oppression.

A journey of nine hours, over steep mountains and through valleys of cultivable ground, brought Mr. Mawe to a small fazenda which is not named, except as being the residence of two worthy dames, Donna Clara and Donna Maria. The next fazenda, called Mantiqueira, is situated in the largest plain which the traveller had as yet traversed; it comprised some rich land, watered by numerous streams, but overrun with weeds and brushwood, and the house was falling to ruin. "The people here," says Mr. Mawe, "seemed to act as if the tenure by which they held their lands, was about to be abolished. Their old houses, fast hastening to decay, bore no marks of repair. Wherever a bit of garden-ground was enclosed, it appeared overrun with weeds. Where coffee-trees, planted in former years, still existed, the present occupiers were too indolent to gather the fruit. No enclosures were made for pasturage: a few goats supplied the little milk that was consumed, and cow's milk was rarely to be procured. Here is land which, under the influence of this genial climate, is capable of yielding two-hundred-fold; here is wood in abundance for every purpose, excellent clay for making bricks, and water at command. Yet, all these advantages are lost to the present occupiers, who consider

them too cheap to be valuable, and perpetually hankering after the precious minerals, seem to think that the only standard for estimating the gifts of nature, is the difficulty of obtaining them." Having passed the hamlet of St. Sebastian, Mr. Mawe arrived, late in the evening, at a village consisting of about twenty houses, called *Borda do Campo*, situated, as its name implies, at the edge of the open country. The next day's route lay for some miles by the side of a barren mountain of quartz, and then descended a declivity, tremendously steep, and full a mile in length, to the banks of the Rio das Mortes, here a small rivulet, about seven yards in width, but of considerable depth and rapidity. On its further side is an *estalagem* (inn), called *Registro Velho* (old register), where the toll of the province used to be paid, before it was transferred to Mathias Barboza. Here are three ranchos and four or five houses. Proceeding hence, the eye is again relieved from confined wood-scenery by the prospect of a grand amphitheatre of mountains, bounded by others of amazing magnitude covered with forests. The road again ascends from the vale of the river, and, in about three miles, conducts the traveller to Barbazena, where the two great roads from the mining country unite; the one to the westward, leading to St. Joâo d'el Rey, Sabara, and Cujaba; the other, in a northerly direction, to Villa Rica, Tijuco, and Minas Novas. This place is stated by Cazal to be 35 miles east-south-east of St. Joâo, and 50 south-south-west of Villa Rica.

Barbazena, at the time of Mr. Mawe's visit, contained, according to his calculation, about two hundred houses. He was the first Englishman that had been seen there, and the inhabitants were intensely curious to know the object of his journey. "Many of the shops," he says, "were well-stocked with English manufactures, and a considerable traffic was carried on with the interior, in

baize, cotton goods, salt, and iron." When Mr. Luccock visited this place eight years after, no prominent marks of commercial prosperity were to be seen. "On the contrary," he says, "many of the shops, which, for the country, are handsome ones, were shut; and it is notorious, that much of the trade which the town once maintained with Sabara and the northern parts of the province, is now removed to St. John's. The people whom we saw, were chiefly of the mixed colours, and were employed in spinning cotton and other domestic manufactures." The town is pleasantly situated on the southern declivity of a considerable hill, and is divided into two principal streets at right angles with each other, which are paved. It then contained, according to this traveller, 350 houses, many of them good ones, and two churches. Cazal mentions one church of our Lady of Mercy, and three chapels. The country adjacent is very fertile. The Brazilian pine is found here, and the olive is said to fructify in some parts. Mandioc is cultivated, but bread is scarce.

Mr. Mawe pushed forward to a fazenda called Resequinha. The next day, pursuing his journey over a dreary tract interspersed with small woods, he reached Bandeira de Coelho: "a more dirty and slovenly place, in a finer situation," he says, "we never visited." Six miles further is "a large village called Louza,* well built, and containing full 2000 inhabitants;" but it had declined from its former consequence, the rich mines to which it owed its importance, being nearly exhausted. In the vicinity of this place, Mr. Mawe passed a hill covered with micaceous iron ore, and the road, for above half a mile, was covered with a rich oxide of iron. At Alto de Virginia and S. Antonio do Ouro Branco, are extensive gold-washings, and the inhabitants are consequently

* No place of this name is mentioned by either Cazal, Luccock, or Von Spix. Possibly, Logoa Dourada is meant.

wretchedly poor. The day's journey terminated at Alto do Morro, an *estalagem* deriving its name from the "tremendous mountain" on which it stands. Continuing his route over bleak and sterile mountains, in one day more, Mr. Mawe reached Villa Rica. Before we proceed to describe the wonders of this city of Plutus, it will be proper, however, to trace the route taken by Mr. Luccock, and that of Drs. Von Spix and Martius, to the same point.

FROM ST. PAULO TO VILLA RICA.

We have already followed the last-mentioned travellers on their route from Ypanema, at far as the register, or custom-house, which marks the frontier of the two provinces of St. Paulo and Minas Geraes.* After passing over the *Morro Grande* by a dangerous road, they reached a level plain, in which stands the *arraial* of Camanducaya, the first station in the province. Beyond this place, ragged mountain chains extend from north to south, with side valleys to the west: the rock is generally a reddish granite. In this gloomy wilderness, the traveller meets with but a few huts, inhabited chiefly by mulattoes; and, besides milk and black beans, no kind of provisions is to be expected. The rainy season unfortunately had commenced when these travellers set out from Ypanema. The numerous mountain streams had overflowed their banks to a great distance; the roads were broken up by them, the bridges carried away, and the low grounds suddenly converted into lakes. The mules could scarcely proceed in the bottomless roads, and their riders had either to wade or to swim through the overflowed torrents which they had to pass; while at night, an open shed, or a dilapidated hut, afforded, in many cases, the only shelter, and the wet wood, which presented the only fuel, emitted more smoke

* Vol. i. pp. 254—61.

than flame. On descending from the mountains into the valley of the Rio Mandu, they found this inconsiderable stream swelled to a turbid and impetuous river above a quarter of a league in width, and passable only by means of a boat. The village of Mandu, consisting of a few poor clay huts, situated in a low country almost entirely covered with wood, was founded between thirty and forty years ago, and owes its origin to its favourable position for the trade from Thaubate to Minas. By this route, the Paulistas import European goods in exchange for cheese, marmalade, tobacco, and coarse cottons. Two days' journey to the westward, is Caldas da Rainha, a warm sulphureous spring, which has of late been much frequented.* The next day after crossing the Mandu, the travellers experienced similar difficulties in crossing the Rio Servo, which had inundated the woody tracts to the depth of from four to six feet. To the north of this river, and about two miles from Mandu, they perceived the first traces of gold-washing. The rock is a quartzy, whitish-green mica-slate, upon which lies a considerable mass of red heavy loam, from which the metal is washed. The greater part of the tract is covered with wood, enclosing small plantations of maize, mandioc, and the sugar-cane. Three leagues from the Mandu is St. Vincente, a small place pleasantly situated on a hill. Two leagues further is St. Anna de Sapucahy,† where the gold-washings are of considerable extent. The broad trenches cut in the terraced declivities,

* "Near the margin, and not far from the origin of the Mozambo, a branch of the Sapucahy, there are several wells of sulphureous water, some warmer than others, which have been found beneficial in certain diseases; and between the plains of the rivers Verde and Barpondy, near a rivulet which falls into the Verde, there are various mineral and vitriolic waters."—*Henderson*, p. 269.

† It is singular that this place should take its name from the Sapucahy, if, as Cazal states, it be twenty-five miles from that river; but this appears from Dr. Von Spix's narrative to be an error, as they reached its banks the same day.

for the purpose of conducting the rain water into the opened sides of the red loam, have the appearance, at a distance, of regular fortifications. "The washed loam," says Dr. Von Spix, "was here and there thrown into high heaps, or covered large tracts of land, through which artificial furrows were drawn. Even the roads are not spared. The whole presented a melancholy picture of wild desolation; and a view of it is the more painful to the traveller, since, at the first place where he sees gold obtained, he finds, instead of hard money, paper currency, and all the misery which it produces. In the capitania of Minas Geraes, in place of the small current coin of 10, 20, 40, 80, 160, and 320 rees,* there have been circulated for about fifteen years, printed notes, which are worth, according to the standard, a vintem of gold, and are issued by the four gold-smelting houses in the capitania. The object of this measure was partly to remedy the real scarcity of copper coin; and it was partly an advantage to the Government, to get into its possession, in exchange for such notes, the smallest quantities of gold dust, which were current as small coin. The injury which this measure did to private credit and morality, was soon doubled by the appearance of a great quantity of forged paper. The slovenly execution of these notes greatly facilitated the forging of them, which the hatred of the inhabitants immediately ascribed to *the English*. The province is now deluged with these notes, and suffers the more from it, because the amount is not diminished, either by being exchanged by the smelting-houses, or by being disposed of in other provinces."

On the banks of the Sapucahy (Pitcher-tree river), at which the travellers arrived in the evening, is the extensive fazenda of St. Barbara; one of the few in which, since the

* 10 rees are equal to about five eighths of 1*d*.; 20 rees = 1*d*. $\frac{3}{5}$; 40 rees = 2*d*. $\frac{5}{8}$; 320 rees = 1*s*. 10*d*.

produce of the gold mines has begun to decline, a rational system of agriculture has been substituted for washing the soil. The proprietor still delivered annually about 1000 cruzadoes in gold, as royal tribute; but his chief profits were derived from large plantations of maize and the sugar-cane, together with farinha and beans. A herd of 600 horned cattle supplied the establishment with meat, milk, cheese, and leather. The Sapucahy meanders sometimes through the plain, sometimes runs between low mountain forests: it abounds in fish, as well as in gigantic water-serpents, a small kind of cayman, and the Brazilian otter. It rises in the Serra Mantiqueira, and, after flowing through this district, joins the Rio Grande.

The travellers crossed the river in boats, and passing over two woody mountains, arrived at a beautiful valley, lying between the Serra de St. Gonzalo on the left, and the Serra de Paciencia on the right, both covered with fine forests, and having an alpine character. The village of St. Gonzalo (or, to give its title at full length, *Conceiçao da Juruoca St. Gonçalo*) was formerly a large and flourishing *arraial*. It possessed, between forty and fifty years ago, considerable gold works; and most of the inhabitants were still deriving, in 1817, from 2000 to 4000 cruzadoes from the mines. But several handsome buildings fallen into decay, testify the instability of the prosperity built on this precarious foundation. The village is three leagues north-north-east of St. Barbara, and four leagues to the south-east of Villa da Campanha. The latter town, the proper name of which is Villa da Princesa da Beira, is, next to St. Joâo d'el Rey, the most important and populous place in the comarca of Rio das Mortes. The gold mines in the neighbourhood, some of which had been worked only a few years at the time of Dr. Von Spix's visit, are among the richest in the country, and had diffused great opulence among the inhabitants. "There are here many pretty houses of two

stories, which have glass windows, one of the most expensive articles of domestic comfort in the interior of Brazil. But," adds this traveller, " it appeared to us, that luxury and corruption of morals kept equal pace with the progress of riches and commerce. As physicians, we had especially occasion to remark the incredible extent of syphilis, and its incalculably fatal consequences to the health and morals of the inhabitants. Not only does the universality of the contagion most seriously tend to diminish the population, but the unblushing openness with which it is spoken of, destroys all moral feeling, and violates, in particular, the rights of the female sex, who are not allowed any influence over the sentiments of the men, and in the formation of happy marriages. This melancholy state of things, which is the darkest side in the picture of the Brazilian character, is rendered still worse by the numbers of imported negro slaves, and of concubines (*mulheres da cama*), to which state the mixed descendants of both races in particular degrade themselves. As the manual labour of gold-washing is performed entirely by slaves, the perverseness of the whites disdains, as dishonourable, every similar employment, even those of agriculture and tending cattle ; in consequence, there are so many idlers, that they are usually distinguished as a separate class, under the name of *vadios*. The traveller, therefore, sees here, with the splendour of the greatest opulence, all the images of human misery, poverty, and degradation. The inhabitants, whose wants even their rich and teeming soil cannot satisfy, are always instituting invidious comparisons between their country and the northern districts of Minas, which they describe to strangers as the true El Dorado, where, with the enjoyment of greater riches, European manners, civilisation, and luxury are already introduced, and to which they are much inferior."*

* Travels in Brazil, vol. ii. pp. 126—8.

Mr. Henderson, after Cazal, describes Campanha as situated in a plain, twelve miles from the Rio Verde, eighty miles south-west of St. Joâo d'el Rey, and 150 miles south of Pitangui. One part of this statement is singularly incorrect: Dr. Von Spix says expressly, that it is situated on a high hill. Besides its church of St Antonio do Valle de Piedade, it has four chapels: it has also a *juiz de fora*, a vicar, and a royal professor. Maize, mandioc, cotton, sugar, and tobacco, are grown in the neighbourhood, and, in some situations, flax; the inhabitants breed cattle and hogs, and some coarse woollens and cottons are manufactured.

The next day's encampment after leaving Campanha, was at the *arraial* of Rio Verde; a small village in a beautiful green plain bounded by woods, and watered by the stream of that name, which flows hence to join the Sapucahy. There is a tolerably good wooden bridge thrown over it. To the north of this stream, the Rio do Peixe (fish river), which is smaller than its neighbour, coming down from the side branches of the Mantiqueira, passes near the fazenda Santa Fé, and flows also into the Rio Grande. It is said to have formerly yielded much gold. "The few houses we saw in its vicinity," says Dr. V. Spix, "by no means indicated the opulence of its owners; yet, the inhabitants of this beautiful and healthy country, which is commanded by the romantic summits of the Mantiqueira, appear to find the gratification of their wishes in the produce of their numerous herds. The agreeable coolness and repose which we enjoyed here, reminded us of the pastures of our native Alps; and we advanced with increasing pleasure and more lively interest, the nearer we approached the centre of Minas."

Four miles beyond the Rio do Peixe, near a solitary chapel called Campo Bello, the road to St. Joâo divides into two branches: the western, which is somewhat the longer route, goes more into the valley by way of Boa Vista,

Brambinho, and the *arraial* das Lavras de Funil; the eastern leads through the mountains, along unfrequented by-paths. Unwilling to descend from these serene regions, the travellers pursued the latter route to a solitary fazenda on the Corrego dos Pinheiros (channel of pine-trees), which is said to resemble a summit of the Tyrolese Alps. Here, a new formation of rock commences, granite and gneiss giving place to micaceous sand-stone or quartzy slate. Half a league further is the fazenda of Parapitinga, which lies at the foot of the Serra Branca, a high mountain of mica-slate. The road ascends its elevated ridge, and from the summit, Dr. Von Spix had an extensive view, embracing the principal mountains of the district. "On our left, we had the mountain of Capivary, on our right, the Serra de Ingahy, both of which run parallel with the Serra Branca from south-south-west and south-west, to north-north-east and north-east; and all branch out, almost at right angles, from the Serra de Mantiqueira, the main stem of the mountains in Minas. These mountain chains, most of them covered to the very summit with pleasant campos, have a level, far-extended ridge, from which side branches stretch into the valleys, and connect the single chains. Here are no frightful clefts or gigantic rocky summits, rent into threatening forms: the eye, on the contrary, reposes in the view of not very deep valleys and of beautifully rounded hills, adorned with pastures, down the gentle slopes of which clear streams here and there descend. The traveller does not here meet with the impressions of those sublime and rugged, high alps of Europe, nor, on the other hand, those of a meaner nature; but the character of these landscapes combines grandeur with simplicity and softness, and these are among the most delightful which we met with between the tropics. As the broad tops of the sarcophagus-shaped mountains rise almost to an equal height, (between 3000 and 4000 feet,) and the valleys, shaped like a trough,

are not very deep, this whole part of the mountains might be called an undulating plateau, in which the Serra de Mantiqueira is gradually lost on the western side. The Serra das Lettras, which has excited the interest of the common people by strange tree-shaped figures of the white flexible quartz,* is but a few miles from this place, and belongs to the same formation. In some places, for instance near the collection of huts called Capivary, at the foot of the Serro of the same name, we found on this quartzy mica-slate, a much decomposed clay-slate of a carnation or greenish colour, containing garnets. All this part of the mountain is less rich in gold than the northern parts ; but, on the other hand, Flora has more lavishly endowed it with a diversity of flowers. The rhexias, in particular, are a great ornament. There is an endless variety of species, all low shrubs : the numerous, thin, profusely-leaved stalks are covered with beautiful red and violet-coloured blossoms. Stately stems of blue vellosias and gay barbacenias, the representatives of the liliaceous plants, principally adorn the stony eminences."†

Descending into the valley, the travellers crossed the little river Ingahy, which, as well as the Capivary, which joins it, carries the tribute of its waters to the Rio Grande. The road then passes obliquely, in a north-north-east direction, over the mountain of Capivary ; and in a deep, narrow part of the valley at its foot, the traveller arrives at the Rio Grande, or Para, where, confined in a high rocky bed,

* "The Serra das Lettras (of Letters) derives its name from a species of hieroglyphic, a natural curiosity which is observed in the interior of a vast and curious cave, formed of divers projections of a sandy stone, with various kinds of plants which grow there. The pretended letters, owing their origin to ferruginous particles, are rude and illegible, but are attributed by the ignorant superstition of the people to the hand of the Apostle Thomas. Near it is a hermitage dedicated to that apostle."—*Henderson*, p. 268.

† Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 137—9.

it forms a very considerable cataract, the thundering noise of which re-echoes in the valley. The source of this river is not far off to the south-east, in the mountain of Juruoca (parrot-stone), a branch of the Mantiqueira.* Immediately above the cataract is a wooden bridge, which is in constant danger of being carried away by the fury of the torrent. At this place, called Ponto Nova, a frontier custom-house has been erected, near which a few settlers have established themselves. Lying in the way from St. Paulo to the principal places in Minas and Goyaz, this point, Dr. Von Spix suggests, is likely to acquire importance as the staple place of the navigation of the Rio Grande. From this place, you may not only proceed southward to the Paraguay, and, by means of that river, to Buenos Ayres, but it is possible, by means of the rivers which fall into it from the north, to reach within a few miles of Villa Boa, the capital of Goyaz. "The branches of the Rio Grande which descend from the north, (namely, from the Montes Pyreneos and the neighbouring Serras of S. Martha and Escalvado,) are not yet sufficiently known; however, the voyage undertaken by Captain José Pinto in the year 1816, from Villa Boa, to find a way by water to S. Paulo, has so far cleared up the geography of those countries, that a communication between the principal sources of the Rio Grande and the streams of Goyaz, may now be anticipated.

* Mr. Luccock describes this mountain as it appeared in the distance near Borda do Campo, on his return from Villa Rica to Rio, —"a large, isolated mass on the right, forming no inconsiderable feature of the landscape." He adds: "Wonderful tales are told concerning it, originating probably in some unusual natural appearances and sounds. The rocking stones on its surface astonish those who touch them; its caverns resound with subterraneous noises; and it is confidently asserted, that when artillery is fired at Rio, the report is distinctly heard in this distant region. There also rises the Rio Grande, a genuine wonder." Cazal states, that near the stone which gives name to the mountain, there is a cataract seventy yards in height.

For, if a person embarks in the harbour of Anicuns, twelve leagues from Villa Boa, the capital of Goyaz, on the Rio dos Boys, the rapid stream of the Rio Turvo and the Rio de Pasmados, into which it falls, will bring him in a short time into the Rio Paranahyba. Three leagues below the junction of those rivers with the latter, the boats have a great waterfal to pass, as far as which the wandering Cajapós Indians who dwell on the lower Paraná, sometimes extend their incursions. The junction of the Paranahyba with the Rio Grande, from which the stream takes the name of Paraná, is stated by Captain Pinto to be only twenty leagues from that cataract, and the navigation up the Rio Grande, as far as Ponto Nova, to be indeed difficult, on account of the strong current, but not interrupted. The almost boundless extent of the inland rivers, and the numerous collateral streams, hold out the most favourable prospect for the inland trade of these fruitful countries.

" While the naturalist is highly interested in considering the geography of the Rio Grande and its collateral streams, on which he contemplates the probability of a future extensive inland trade, he is especially attracted by the nature of the country through which it flows. The whole system of the rivers which it and its collateral, the Paranahyba, receive during the whole of their extensive course, descends from mountains which are distinguished, above many others, as much by their height and extent, as by their especially belonging to that formation which contains such immense quantities of gold. On the east, the picturesque Serra Mantiqueira forms the principal boundary: towards the north-east, the Serra Negra, Da Canastra, Da Marcella, and Dos Cristaës, constitute the boundary between it and the Rio de S. Francisco. On the north side, the principal mountains of Goyaz, namely, the Montes Pyreneos and their branches, divide the great

valleys of the Araguaya and the Tocantins from that of the Rio Grande. All these mountains, which are chiefly composed of quartzy mica-slate, contain on both their declivities the richest stores of that metal. They form the principal stem of all the Brazilian mountains of the interior; and in them arise three mighty streams, the Tocantins, the Rio de S. Francisco, and the Paraná, which flow in three very different directions to the sea. The country through which the latter flows, which extends from 17° to 28° south latitude, and from the meridian of S. Joâo d'el Rey (47° 55′ west of Paris) to that of Buenos Ayres (60° 51′ 15″ west of Paris,) and comprehends a great part of the capitanias of Minas Geraës, S. Paulo, and Paraná, has nearly the same physical character through this great extent. Only the north-eastern tract, from which the river rises, and the eastern boundary, are traversed by those mountains among which we had hitherto travelled, and the nature and formation of which we have attempted to describe. Further to the west, the land is either level, or broken only by gently rising hills, and insulated mountain ridges, through which, for the most part, that quartzy mica-slate (flexible quartz) is diffused, constantly accompanied by iron, platina, and gold. On the east side, the river is joined by several considerable streams, the Tieté, the Paranapanema, and the Iguaçu or Curitiba, all of which have a rapid course, frequently interrupted by cataracts: the Rio Pardo, which rises in the mountains of Camapuâo, is the only considerable collateral stream on the west side. The low lands, and particularly the banks of those rivers, are covered with thick, but not very high forests; the other, and by far the greater part, of the surface, is overgrown with bushes and grey-green hairy grasses, and forms those boundless plains, the pasture of numerous herds of cattle, to which the inhabitants, on account of their uniformity and extent, have given the name of Campos Geraës."

Mr. Luccock, in travelling from Rio to St. Joâo d'el Rey, thus describes the view which presented itself from the highest point of the road, a few miles beyond the church of Curral Novo. " A most extensive view here opened on every side; but the distant horizon did not, as is usual in such cases, melt away into air: it consisted of a strongly undulated outline, with the intermediate space filled up by bold masses of detached mountains, on one side struck by the full glow of an afternoon tropical sun, while the other was involved in deep blue shade. Toward the north, the lofty serros about Villa Rica, a hundred miles distant in a right line, were pointed out. Toward the south-east, appeared the cones near Padre Correios, from which we had travelled at least 160 miles; and had not a slight haze rested in that quarter, we should have beheld the Organ mountains, not far from the capital. To the west were clearly seen the serros of St. Joze and Lenheiro, a ridge of mountains above St. John d'el Rey. In the north-east, the nameless bluff heads of the Mantequeira rose one beyond another in distinguishable shades. Yet, the longest line of all was toward the south-west, where the remotest visible mountains were thought to be near the frontiers of St. Paul's. We here stood on the southern verge of the vast basin of the Rio Grande, one of the principal branches of the mighty Parana, and, looking over the brink, beheld the northern slope of the long Parahyba, or rather stretched our view across the country which it drains. This inclined plane, or northern half of the vale, the strong support of the Mantiqueiran Serro, extends about sixty miles in a straight line, and the angle of its ascent is nearly one degree fifteen minutes. The lower region of it is a broken country, where the naked cones stand thickly, and rise nearly to the height of our present station. On the upper part of the buttress is a covering of red clay, mingled with mica

and quartz: and the core of the extended plains towards the north, appears to be composed, in the same manner, of granitic rocks in a conical shape. The spaces between them are filled up with various substances of later formation; but by far the greater proportion consists of red clay mingled with mica. The *campo*, or table-land of Brazil, resting on this granitic core, is composed of great masses of mountain, which appear to be detached from each other, having between them broad basins, where the ground is cut into deep ravines, and formed of strong undulations of from three to six hundred feet in height. The sides of these ravines are exceedingly steep, and their bottoms contain beds of torrents, so broken and generally so difficult as to require bridges; but the country has not yet advanced far enough for the construction of many artificial roads. Hence, the course of travellers lies along the heads of ravines, the ridge of the hill between them, even though it deviate to every point of the compass: here people meet with solid ground, and an uninterrupted course, though the ridge is something almost as narrow as the road which passes along it, and the descent on either hand is rapid, though not precipitous." *

The effect of passing out of the region of forests into these elevated open districts, is represented as most inspiriting. "In Rio," says this traveller, "I had heard much of the Campo, so that I became almost impatient of the thick forests and narrow and swampy roads, which we had travelled for about two leagues, when our guide made a short turn to the right, and suddenly the downs lay before us. We were at the foot of a short and steep hill. The morning was advanced and sultry; and among the woods, not a breath of air was stirring. At once we were saluted by a fine bracing breeze in our faces, and hailed it

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 439, 40.

with a burst of joy. We dismounted, and in the shade, at the very verge of the forest, refreshed ourselves and the horses. This was indeed a luxurious hour: I breathed ambrosial gales, and felt my nerves new-strung. I had often heard of invalids who left the city in the last stages of debility, and, on arriving at these salubrious regions, were so much recovered, that, according to their own phrase, they could buffet with and subdue a sturdy mule. Though in health, I experienced myself a wonderful renovation both of power and spirits. From the summit of the hill, we looked backward over the tops of the trees, and before us upon an open country quite destitute of wood, to an almost unbounded horizon." *

Dr. Von Spix also speaks of the transition from the dark, low forests to the free, open tracts as producing a striking change of feeling; and as a contrast to the picture already presented to our readers of a Brazilian forest, † we shall transcribe the learned naturalist's minute description of

A BRAZILIAN CAMPO OR MOUNTAIN PLAIN.

"On these serene and tranquil heights, the noisy inhabitants of the wood are mute: we no longer hear the howling of herds of monkeys, the incessant screams of innumerable parrots, orioles, and toucans, the far-sounding hammering of the wood-peckers, the metallic notes of the uraponga, the full tones of manakins, the cry of the hoccoes, jacues, &c. The more numerous are the hum-

* Yet, when, in returning, Mr. Luccock re-entered, at Bordo do Campo, the region of trees, he confesses that the sight of them, as they darkly shadowed through the dawn and the mist, gave him pleasure. "So soon," he exclaims, "are we tired of uniformity, so readily pleased with change."

† Vol. i. p. 163.

ming-birds, buzzing like bees round the flowering shrubs; gay butterflies fluttering over the rippling streams; numerous wasps flying in and out of their long nests hanging suspended to the trees; and large hornets *(morimbondos)* hovering over the ground, which is undermined to a great extent with their cells. The red-capped and hooded fly-catcher, the *barbudos* (the barbet), little sparrow-hawks, the rusty-red or spotted *caboré* (Brazilian owl), bask on the shrubs during the heat of noon, and watch, concealed among the branches, for the small birds and insects which fly by; the tinamus walks slowly among the pine-apple plants, *cnapupés* and *nambús* in the grass; single toucans, seeking berries, hop among the branches; the purple tanagers follow each other in amorous pursuit from tree to tree; the *caracará* (falco brasiliensis), flying about the roads quite tame, to settle upon the backs of the mules or oxen; small wood-peckers silently creep up the trees, and look in the bark for insects; the rusty thrush, called *João de Barros*, fearlessly fixes its oven-shaped nest quite low between the branches; the siskin-like creeper slips imperceptibly from its nest, (which, like that of the pigeons, is built of twigs, and hangs down from the branches to the length of several feet,) to add a new division to it for this year; the *câoha*, sitting still on the tops of the trees, looks down after the serpents basking on the roads, which, even though poisonous, constitute its food; and sometimes, when it sees people approaching, it sets up a cry of distress, resembling a human voice. It is very rarely that the tranquillity of the place is interrupted, when garrulous orioles and little parrots and parroquets, coming in flocks from the maize and cotton plantations in the neighbouring wood, alight upon the single trees on the campos, and with terrible cries appear still to contend for the booty; or bands of restless hooded

cuckoos, crowded together upon the branches, defend, with a noisy croaking, their common nest, which is full of green-speckled eggs. Alarmed by this noise, or by passing travellers, numerous families of little pigeons (*rolas*), often no bigger than a sparrow, fly from bush to bush; the larger pigeons (*amarzoga* and *troquase*,) seeking singly among the bushes for food, hasten alarmed to the summits of the neighbouring wood, where their brilliant plumage shines in the sun; numerous flocks of little monkeys run whistling and hissing to the recesses of the forest; the cavies, running about on the tops of the mountains, hastily secrete themselves under loose stones; the American ostriches (*Emus*), which herd in families, gallop at the slightest noise, like horses through the bushes, and over hills and valleys, accompanied by their young; the dicholopus (*siriemas*) which pursues serpents, flies, sometimes sinking into the grass, sometimes rising into the trees, or rapidly climbing the summits of the hills, where it sends forth its loud, deceitful cry, resembling that of the bustard; the terrified armadillo (*tatú*) runs fearfully about to look for a hiding-place, or, when the danger presses, sinks into its armour; the ant-eater (*tamanduá*) runs heavily through the plain, and, in case of need, lying on its back, threatens its pursuers with its sharp claws. Far from all noise, the slender deer, the black tapir, or the pecari, feed on the skirts of the forest. Elevated above all this, the red-headed vulture (*urubú*) soars in the higher regions; the dangerous rattle-snake (*cascaoel*), hidden in the grasses, excites terror by its rattle; the gigantic snake sports suspended from the tree with its head upon the ground; and the crocodile, resembling the trunk of a tree, basks in the sun on the banks of the pools. After all this has passed during the day before the eyes of the traveller, the approach of night, with the chirping of the grasshoppers,

the monotonous cry of the goat-sucker (*João corta pão,*) the barking of the prowling wolf and of the shy fox, or the roaring of the ounces, completes the singular picture of the animal kingdom in these peaceful plains."

In travelling from St. Paulo to Villa Rica, the accurate observer may easily perceive a gradual change in the general appearance of the country, when he has passed the boundary which divides the waters flowing southwards to the Rio Grande, from those which run northwards, and fall into the Rio de S. Francisco. "While the Rio Grande, with the thundering noise of its fall, here takes leave of its native mountains, to flow to the lower countries towards the west, it at the same time prepares the wanderer for grander scenes of nature, which await him as he advances further to the north. The mountains become more lofty and more steep, the valleys deeper; massive rocks, on the summits or in the vale, more frequently interrupt the verdant slopes and plains; the streams flow with a more rapid course. Sometimes, the traveller finds himself on elevated spots which command a sublime prospect of manifold insulated mountain tops and profound valleys; sometimes, he is enclosed between steep and threatening walls of rock. All objects assume more and more the features of a romantic alpine country."

From Ponte Nova, the road lies in a north-easterly direction along the ridge of hills connecting the Serra de Capivary with the Serra de Viruna. The country is described by Dr. Von Spix as poetically rural, but lonely and desolate. Extensive forests are still seen running along the declivities and valleys. Beyond the fazenda of Vittoria, the road leads north-north-east over several bare, rounded mountains which connect the main branches of the Serra Mantiqueira, running north-west and south-east. A short distance before he reaches Morro de Bom Fim, the last of these high mountains, the traveller crosses the Rio das Mortes, winding

through a broad, swampy valley, and bearing its dark waters to the Rio Grande, which it joins about seventy miles west of S. Joâo d'el Rey. It was in this valley, we are informed, that two parties of Paulistas, quarrelling from lust of gold, engaged in a sanguinary contest, from which the river has derived its sinister name. From the steep summit of the Morro de Bom Fim, there is a noble prospect over the whole valley of the river; and, on descending the further side, the capital of the comarca is seen lying at the foot of the bare mountain Lenheiro, about two miles from the river which formerly gave its name to the town. The church of Bom Fim, seated on the extreme brow of the hill, about 200 feet above the town, affords an advantageous bird's-eye view of the place, which, as the site of the Marquis Pombal's projected capital, claims a particular description.

THE VILLA DE S. JOAO D'EL REY,

ANTECEDENTLY called Rio das Mortes, received its present name on being created a town in 1712, in honour of King John V. Its first appearance is described both by Mr. Luccock and Dr. Von Spix as very pleasing. "The many mountains by which this little town is surrounded, the numerous, dazzling white houses, and the little river Tijuco, which flows through the middle of it, and is often nearly dry, give it a pleasant, romantic appearance. A great number of country houses, scattered on the declivity, lead to the solid stone bridge thrown over the above-mentioned river, which unites that part of the town lying along the eminence, with the larger portion in the plain." * "The intermixture of numerous churches with the houses, of red tiles unblackened by smoke, of roofs undeformed by chimneys, of walls rendered clean and bright by plaster

* Von Spix, vol. ii. p. 148.

and white-washing, of the grey pavement in the streets, the yellow sands of the river, and the green shrubbery of the gardens, form a curious and interesting picture. As a whole, the town is compact, its form nearly circular, and its situation and size are much like those of Halifax in Yorkshire. The surrounding scenery is roughly mountainous, and exhibits a strange mixture of roundly formed hills and broken rocks, of barrenness and verdure, of poverty of soil and richness of vegetation, of gardens in a desert, and of comfort amidst desolation. After gazing with wonder and delight upon a landscape so singular, I reflected—Is this the town of which, for ten years past, I have heard so much! Where can its well-known extensive business be transacted? Where the goods it receives be consumed? Where are the residences of its merchants, their warehouses and shops? Where the habitations of their customers and servants? Where the culture which yields them supplies, and furnishes a surplus for export?

"There are in St. John, about 6000 inhabitants, of which only one-third are white people, the rest being negroes and mulattoes. For their employment and support, there are no manufactures, except a small one of broad-brimmed woollen hats, peculiar to the mining districts, and excellent in their kind. In the adjoining country, a large quantity of woollen cloth is made from a native produce, and serves for ordinary clothing. The shops occupy (if it may be called occupation) their proportion of the inhabitants, and others are employed on their farms, travel with troops (caravans), or fill places of public trust. Priests and lawyers appear to be numerous here, as well as in other places, beyond what the legitimate calls of religion and justice require. There are no busy faces, no bustle of occupation, no blacks plying for hire, no tones of persons crying articles of daily and general consumption for sale, but one general appearance of vacancy,

listlessness, and lounging. All white people are privileged by their colour to live free from toil. The employments of gentlemen seldom call them out of doors, and females of respectable station and character are not accustomed to shew themselves in the streets."*

That a brisk trade is carried on here, however, appears from the fact stated by Dr. Von Spix, that four constantly employed caravans, each of fifty mules, annually go backwards and forwards to the capital, conveying thither bacon, cheese, some cottons, woollen hats, horned cattle, mules, and gold bars; and bringing back, in return, European goods, chiefly Portuguese and English, such as calicoes, handkerchiefs, lace, iron-ware, wine, porter, and liqueurs.† Though the environs are very mountainous and bare, and seem to be thinly peopled, yet, in the clefts of the mountains and the valleys, many fazendas are scattered, which furnish the necessary supplies of maize, mandioc, beans, oranges,‡ tobacco, a small quantity of sugar and cotton, cheese in abundance, cattle, swine, and mules; while the streams, which are full of fish, contribute to the sufficiency of food.

"The general appearance of St. John," continues Mr. Luccock, "is that of all Portuguese towns of the same class: the houses are low, white-washed, and furnished

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 453, 454, 460.

† In the fazenda of Joze Coreio Pinto, who acted as Mr. Luccock's *tropeiro*, or guide, "besides a good display of silver plate and British earthenware, we had," he says, "*Rosea* from the city, bottled London porter, and good Port wine, served in cut-glass decanters."

‡ "There are here white *tangerina* oranges, which are not met with in any other part."—*Henderson*, p. 270. Mr. Luccock noticed at the governor's table, twenty-nine different sorts of native fruits, preserved in sugar, the growth and manufacture of the neighbourhood; and a white tangerine orange attracted his attention by its singular colour and excellent flavour. The fruit season begins in December.

with latticed windows: the streets are narrow, crooked, far from uniform, and very slippery, being paved with large, smooth blue stones, with a channel in the middle. The site of the buildings is so irregular that they overtop and overlook each other, the conspicuous points being selected for public offices and the best private houses. Most of these have painted window-shutters, if not also glazed windows, and communicate a gayety and airiness to the town which it would otherwise want. In the midst of it runs a wide, shallow stream, over which are thrown two good stone bridges. There is no public market-place, and the shops are generally small and dark, destitute of windows, like those of Rio de Janeiro, and for the most part well furnished with goods.

"Among the churches, thirteen in number, there is a sort of Metropolitan, situated near the principal street, and built in *taipé*, or paysan, which, notwithstanding its mean exterior, contains some extraordinary ornaments. On the right side of the altar is a beautiful copy, from one of the old masters, of the Last Supper; on the left is an equally beautiful representation of Mary washing the feet of Jesus; and, in compartments beneath them, are some tolerable paintings, from bad designs, of the falling manna in the wilderness, and other subjects taken from the Old Testament. The ceiling of this church, which is arched, has lately been painted at the sole charge of a merchant in the town. The colours are excellent, but do not harmonise among themselves, and, being composed chiefly of red, yellow, and blue, appear gaudy, and correspond only to the Brazilian taste. In the centre is a figure of the patron saint, Nossa Senhora de Pilar, and the arms of Portugal: above the cornice, on the right, occupying the whole length of the nave, are the four evangelists, and alternately with them an angel, standing in a sort of projecting pulpit, while their subordinate coadjutors in the

salvation of men, occupying less conspicuous stations, are placed in recesses. Immediately over the orchestra, and under the protection of St. John, the artist has contrived to introduce a portrait of the gentleman at whose expense the work was executed. On the opposite side of the ceiling, and the left of the altar, are subjects of a different kind. There appear representations of priests and friars, with allegorical allusions to visions and divine communications with which they were favoured. The idea of inspiration is expressed in this singular manner: from a small cloud proceeds a speaking-trumpet, whose sound, represented by strong yellow rays, falls directly upon the ear of the priest to whom the supernatural information is addressed. The young man who has thus displayed his skill, is a native of the country, and has never seen an oil painting except those which the churches of St. John contain; his works, therefore, ought not be examined with the severity of criticism: his outline and expression are good, his penciling coarse, and the figures want relief; their attributes, as might be expected, are often incorrect, and display a want of judgement, taste, and science. Like most men of genius, he is poor, paints for trifling sums, and, should he continue here, must ever remain a miserable dependant.

" The church which surpasses all the others in external appearance, although not in rank, is that of St. Francisco, which stands in a moderately sized square in the best part of the town, but, like several others of the sacred edifices, it is unfinished; yet, we attended divine worship there, among scaffolding and cranes, and beheld a congregation far more serious and attentive, both to prayers and sermon, than I had ever observed in any other Catholic country, or place of Roman Catholic devotion.

" This church, when finished, will make a handsome appearance; it is built of granite, and will display a

front ornamented with two towers, and a sculptured representation of St. Francisco's sufferings. The other, which has been described, at present is furnished with only one tower, which stands detached from it; but preparations are making to rebuild the front with two steeples, which, according to the plan exhibited, will be tall and well proportioned. A third of these edifices, yet unconsecrated, is likewise in a state of forwardness, constructed of sandstone, which contains a quantity of iron, but is not yet ready for public service, and the work seems to proceed heavily. In a fourth, which, owing to some oversight or delay, I did not enter, there are said to be many splendid ornaments, and an interior entirely covered with gold. In some of the steeples are hung bells of considerable weight, a circumstance which greatly surprised me, because each of them must have been conveyed from the coast and up the mountains, supported between mules in the manner of a bier. In the cause of religion, however, the early Brazilians have overcome great difficulties, and rendered their churches the best, and almost the only good specimens of architectural taste.

"The government-house is a large, substantial building, two stories high, well situated both for observing what passes in the town, and for the despatch of public business. Adjoining to it are the public offices, which form one side of an unfinished plaza or square; some plain, substantial houses stand on the other, and in the centre, the pillar of public execution; one of which is placed, in terrorem, in some frequented part of every town in the province. Here it is surmounted by a figure of Minerva, holding a drawn and lifted sabre in her right hand, instead of a spear, and in her left the scales of justice, not hoodwinked indeed, nor displaying calm firmness in her attitude and features, but exhibiting all the fierceness of Mars when enraged.

" The jail is situated in the principal street, a large and strong building, ugly and comfortless, as perhaps it ought to be; dirty and disgusting, as might be expected from the manners and habits of the people. Its inmates are numerous, always visible through broad, unglazed, grated windows, and perpetually begging. The charges against them are mostly capital, and among these none so common as assassination.

" Of a very different description is the misericordia, or house of mercy, an excellent establishment, conveniently arranged, and kept in good repair, and, being in a great measure supported by voluntary contributions, it speaks favourably for the general character of the town. Its funds are well administered, and generally employed in aiding about fifty poor patients, all of whom are males. They are admitted without distinction or inquiry, except such as relate to their disease and distress. When the present governor came into office, this charity was in the worst state of management, and its affairs were involved and intricate. He succeeded, after a struggle of more than two years, in placing it upon a respectable footing, and by these means brought medical aid within the reach of those who were perishing for want of it, and diffused, through the town and comarca under his care, the warmest sentiments of gratitude."

The town is governed by a *desembargador* or supreme judge; (a higher title, apparently, than *ouvidor* or magistrate;) it has also " an attorney-general, a vicar-*foranco*," and " a royal Latin professor." Its gold-smelting house (*casa de fundiçâo do oiro*) is on the same footing as that of Villa Rica, with the exception of the *abridor dos cunhos* (engraver of coins) attached to the latter establishment. It is stated by Mr. Henderson to be eighty miles south-west of Villa Rica, about the same distance south-south-west of Sabara, and upwards of 200 north-west of Rio.

Mr. Luccock calculated that, by the route he took, it was 265 miles distant from the capital.

In former times, the chief occupation of the people was searching for gold. The mine to which the town owes its origin and its celebrity, and whence such masses of mineral wealth have been extracted, is situated within the town, near the government-house. It is nothing more, Mr. Luccock says, than a deep pit with perpendicular sides, about twenty-five feet over, and nearly round, formed in a whitish sand-stone, which contains some pyrites. It is situated "in the focus of the hills which rise in great majesty behind it," forming the Serro of Lenheiro. The waters descending from these heights in the rainy season, congregate in this pit. Artificial channels also are cut in various directions, some to a great distance, to convey the waters to the same spot; so that, when rain falls, the pit overflows with water, and the surplus finds its way, down the side of a steep declivity, to the level of the river. "At my first visit to this natural storehouse of treasures," says this traveller, "all its channels were dry, and the stagnant water, of a dirty green colour, did not rise to within ten feet of the brink. This reservoir is said to be common property; a source whence any one may extract what he can find. During the dry season, therefore, a number of people sometimes determine to set slaves to work with chain-pumps, to draw out as much of the waters as they can, and then grope in the hollows of the uneven bottom for the metal which it may contain. On such occasions, it is soon found that there is evidently some communication with the interior waters of the mountain; for, if the labour be intermitted, the water in the pit returns to its usual elevation. This circumstance perpetually deters the people from commencing such operations, because they are always expensive, and may be unavailing."

An opinion prevails, that the waters of the mine are con-

nected with those of the river. This is disproved by the fact, that the surface of the water in the pit is at least fifty feet above the river. The pit might easily be drained, either by cutting down the side fronting the river, by perforating the hills near the bottom, or by syphons; but, insatiable as is the thirst for gold, their ignorance in respect to the mechanical means of obtaining the produce of their mines, is almost incredible; and their reply to any recommendation of the kind was, that "the English always have extraordinary methods of doing things, which Brazilians do not understand." The native sources of the gold brought down by the rains, have never yet been examined. Less regard is now paid to mining speculations; and only the poorer people still continue to wash gold-dust from the gravel of the river, in order, by the sale of it, to provide themselves with the means of subsistence. Not, Mr. Luccock thinks, that the mines are by any means exhausted, or that the cascalho yields less gold than formerly, but because labour has risen in value, the price of slaves is advanced, agricultural produce is more in request, and the removal of the court to Rio had introduced a considerable revolution in the ideas of the people, by giving birth to a spirit of commercial enterprise. The greater part of the gold-dust now brought to the smelting-house here, comes from the Villa de Campanha, and the neighbouring town of S. Joze. Instead of the gold-mines, it is the inland trade, to which the town owes its increasing prosperity. At the arrival of the Prince Regent, the comarca of Rio das Mortes is said to have been indebted to Rio not less than 40,000 cruzadoes; but, in 1818, it had not only discharged this debt, but had put out to interest there a large capital of its own. The greatest drawback on the prosperity of the town, is the paper system. The smelting-house acts as a provincial bank, and issues notes payable on demand, for sums as low as a shilling, which,

in their appearance, paper, and engraving, are little better, Mr. Luccock says, than our turnpike-tickets. It is not extraordinary, therefore, that forgeries should continually occur, nor that a general distrust respecting them should prevail.

Though there is a great want of education among the inhabitants, Mr. Luccock gives them credit for possessing their full share of good sense, together with more sincerity, and less of the spirit of intrigue, than are usually found in this part of the world. They are lively, fond of dancing, friendly, and kind. But the want of books, masters, and every thing approaching to literary intercourse, is a serious evil. The lower classes are idle and profligate. "However singular it may appear," says Dr. Von Spix, "it is nevertheless certain, and is observed by every traveller, that the inhabitants of Minas are entirely different, both in character and person, from those of the other capitanias, and particularly from the Paulistas. The Mineiro has, in general, a slender, lean figure, narrow breast, long neck, oblong face, black, lively eyes, and black hair on the head and breast; he has naturally a noble pride, and is sometimes very delicate, obliging, and sensible in his outward behaviour; he is very temperate, and seems particularly to be fond of a romantic way of life. In all these features, he much more resembles the lively Pernambucan, than the gloomy Paulista. Like the former, he seems to have a certain predilection for foreign productions and dress. Like the Englishman,* the Mineiro is very fond of clean linen and white garments, particularly on holidays. His usual national costume differs from that of the Paulista. It generally consists of a short jacket of calico or black vel-

* This testimony of the learned German to English cleanliness as a national peculiarity, supplies an inference not very complimentary as regards foreigners.

veteen, a white waistcoat with gold buttons, the small-clothes of velvet or velveteen, long boots of undyed leather, fastened above the knees with buckles, and a beaver (woollen ?) hat with a broad brim, which serves as a parasol. The sword, and often the musket, together with the umbrella, are his inseparable companions whenever he goes any distance from home. Their journeys, however short, are never made but on mules. Their stirrups and bits are of silver; and the handle of the great knife which sticks in the boot below the knee, is of the same metal. In these excursions, the women are always carried in litters, either by mules or negroes; or, dressed in a long blue pelisse and round hat, sit in a kind of arm-chair fastened upon a mule. Their dress, except the head, which is protected only by a parasol, is in the French fashion: the borders of their white robes are frequently ornamented with embroidered or printed flowers and gallant verses."

Living is cheap at St. Joâo. There is "excellent wheaten bread," but the people prefer the mandioc flour and preparations of Indian corn, which, with beef, bacon, pulse, and other vegetables, form the chief articles of food. The larger fruit-trees flourish here luxuriantly, and the *jabuticaba*, with fruit resembling in size and colour the cherry, the orange-tree, and the coffee-plant, mingling with the *tata* or pine,* the mango, the calabash, the apple, the cherry, and the peach, compose a singular kind of orchard. Mr. Luccock saw a plantation of vines which appeared flourishing. Beneath the broad-spreading trees, the escu-

* "Though these trees are abundant, and though when cut, either by accident or design, they yield an extraordinary abundance of turpentine, so rich as to bear the heat of a vertical sun, the government allows deals, and resin, and turpentine to be imported from the United States or from Sweden, while much of the latter, more than Brazil can want, runs to waste upon its own soil."—*Luccock*, p. 429. This traveller noticed one of these trees, which measured twelve feet round.

lent and the garden-pea are seen commingling with carnations and violets, together with the poppy, the piony, and the rose; marjoram, mignonette, rosemary, and thyme are also found here; the same sun and the same soil giving birth to flowers of the torrid and the temperate climes.

Throughout the comarca of Rio das Mortes, which is itself larger than the whole kingdom of Portugal, the land is for the most part rich and fertile in a high degree. From March to November, the climate is fine and dry, the nights being sometimes sharp and frosty: ice is occasionally formed, and snow falls, but neither of them can endure the noon-day sun. About the middle of November, the rainy season is ushered in by violent thunder and lightning. In continued damp weather, the air is unpleasantly cold. Rain always comes from the south, and how heavy soever the cloud may appear towards the opposite quarter, rain never passes the Rio das Mortes from the north: the people have a saying, that "it cannot pay the toll levied at the bridge over that river." Goitres are prevalent, not only in this comarca, but throughout the mining district, greatly afflicting persons of all classes and colours;* and Mr. Luccock adds, "even the cattle do not escape." This traveller is disposed to attribute them to the properties of the water of the rivers, together with the scarcity of salt. He mentions a case in which the exclusive use of spring water had been apparently successful in banishing this dreadful disease from the estate; and he recommends the free use of common salt as a probable remedy.† In other respects, the country may be reckoned extremely healthy.

The road pursued by Dr. Von Spix, from St. Joâo

* The goitre is found prevailing also in some districts of St. Paulo. See vol. i. p. 246.

† "Throughout the interior of South America, salt is an article of extraordinary luxury. For want of it, European cattle languish and die; and it is wonderful to see how oxen and mules will lick and gnaw the ground of the rancho where a cargo of salt has been laid down only for a single night."—*Luccock*, p. 478. See vol. i. p. 255.

d'el Rey to Villa Rica, leads over the western declivity of the Serro of St. Joze, which has a barren appearance; it contains sulphur and several species of metal, but no gold. Beyond this mountain, and eight miles north-north-west of St. Joâo, stands the little town of St. Joze, which has nothing particularly remarkable, except its church of St. Antonio, which is reckoned the handsomest in the whole province. On the western side of the Serro, no trace of agriculture meets the eye of the traveller, but all the campos lie dry and desolate as far as the fazenda of Canduahy and the village of Lagoa Dourada, a distance of about twenty-four miles from St. Joâo. A forest track succeeds, some miles in length, after which the country improves in beauty, and, beyond the Rio Paraopeba, assumes a character of Alpine grandeur. Dr. Von Spix reached the wooden bridge over this river at the end of the second day. It is one of the principal heads of the St. Francisco. The road thence passes over the Serra de Congonhas, into the deep and narrow valley watered by the little river of the same name, which flows westward to the Paraopeba. A much steeper mountain has next to be surmounted, the Morro de Solidade; the Morro de Gravier (a continuation of the Serra de Oiro Branco) succeeds; and the road continues to ascend, passing over a succession of mountains, having for their basis a quartzy mica-slate, mingled with iron, and affording abundant subject for interesting observation to the geologist. The scattered farms become more numerous as the traveller approaches Villa Rica. From the Morro de Gravier, the descent is but inconsiderable to the beautiful fazenda of Capâo. A quarter of a league further is that of Lana. This is the district in which are found the well-known Brazilian topazes. Leaving Lana, the road runs for some time through narrow ravines, past rugged declivities and steep mountain walls, till at length, the view suddenly expands, and shews a labyrinth of mountains and valleys running into each

other, with the Itacolumi (child of stone), covered at its base with dark forests, and its bare, rocky summit towering above the whole. From the last promontories of this mountain, the highest in the province, the travellers obtained the welcome sight of the long-wished place of their destination. "Full of joy," says Dr. Von Spix, "we rode down the mountain, and just one month after our departure from Ypanema, arrived safe in the capital of the mining country."

We have yet to bring up Mr. Luccock, who, instead of pursuing this direct route, took the road to Queluz, (otherwise Carijos,) situated, according to Cazal, fifty miles north-east of St. Joâo d'el Rey, three from the river Congonhas, and about thirty south-south-west of Villa Rica. At two leagues from the Rio das Mortes, he crossed the Carainde, and then pursued a north-north-west direction over a country resembling the Yorkshire moors, which, for fifteen miles, presented no mark of human habitation, except a few huts at a short distance from the suburbs of St. Joâo. The aspect of the district through which his road led the second day, is compared to the Dorsetshire downs, but on a larger scale. His direction was north-east by north, leaving on the left, on a high hill, the village of Lagoa Dourada;* and at the end of eighteen miles, he reached the large fazenda of Palmeiros. The third day, he entered on the great north road leading through Barbazena to Villa Rica, and passing the small village of Resquinha, began to ascend the mountains. Having gained the summit of a considerable eminence, a fine view presented itself, embracing a semicircle of mountains commencing in the south-east, and stretching away by the north towards the west, within which, the "billowy land," declining towards

* Mr. Luccock subsequently visited this place in returning by a different route.

the north, is adorned with many patches of wood; reminding Mr. Luccock of the "park-like scenery in the neighbourhood of Sheffield." In the midst stands the town of Queluz, with its white-washed houses, forming one of the prettiest features in the picture. Towards the south appeared the rough Morro of St. Joze, and west of it, the far-distant lands of the Rio Grande. As he advanced, the mountains assumed a bolder form, and became more like those of Caernarvon, as they appear when approaching them from Gwindu, in Anglesea.

The town of Queluz consists of about a hundred houses, arranged along the ridge of a hill, which is just broad enough for a street. It contains a handsome church and two chapels, or hermitages. In the environs, the tobacco-plant flourishes, in a wild state, with the utmost luxuriance. "To continue to think favourably of Queluz," says our traveller, "a stranger should content himself with its external appearance: he should neither enter the houses, nor have any intercourse with the inhabitants. The wretched internal state of the one, is as revolting as the manners of the other. Gold, which has been extensively and successfully sought in the neighbourhood, has at length failed, and left the people with debased minds and idle habits. There is something in their appearance and countenances uncommonly villanous; more so, I think, than I have observed in any other part of Brazil."*

A league from Queluz, the road crosses the Paraopeba, where it forms a small, rapid stream, and continues along its left bank through a narrow, woody glen, at the end of which a good bridge over the stream, now greatly increased,

* In this neighbourhood, Mr. Luccock noticed the *anou*, a bird resembling in size and shape the magpie, with feathers bearded like those in the tail of the bird of paradise; the *merlu*, "the crow of Brazil, and in many places called *corvo*," about the size of a lark, and entirely black; the *ariba-raba* or cock-tail, in size and colour resembling the lark, but not in song; and the *gaviam-pomba*, or hawk-pigeon, a bird of prey.

conducts the traveller from the comarca of St. Joâo to that of Villa Rica. A hill on the left of the road here presents a wonderful object. It is described by Mr. Luccock as "one entire mass of iron, so perfectly free from any mixture of common soil as to produce no vegetable whatever, being covered with a complete coating of rust or oxyde of iron. The hill is so lofty and steep that its top was not discernible; but, from its more elevated part, nodules of corroded metal had rolled down, and greatly embarrassed the road. At the foot of the mountain, the soil is red clay mixed with ponderous brown dust. As we advanced, the metal seemed to become less pure, until, after an extent of two leagues and a half, it altogether vanished, and was succeeded by the common clayey land. I had often heard of this immense mass of metal, but none of the reports had presented an adequate picture of it to the imagination. The very core of the hill, as far as we could judge, appeared to consist of vast blocks of iron in tables; and it is so singularly free from alloy, as to produce, when smelted, 95 per cent of pure metal."

The road proceeds to the village of Ouro Branco (white gold), situated at the foot of the lofty Serro of the same name, and containing a church and several vendas, and about fifty wretched houses. Here the mania for gold-washing has converted the soil into heaps of stones and scenes of desolation. The road, turning due east, skirts the foot of the mountain, till, where the summit has become comparatively low, it turns up by an easy ascent towards the north; and half-way up is a *rancho*, called, from its situation, Meyo Serro. An uninteresting region extends to Sicara, the name given to a collection of four or five houses, ten miles from Villa Rica. Five miles further is Boa Vista, a village containing a church and about a dozen houses, situated on a high point commanding a magnificent view towards the west and north-west. About two miles

from Boa Vista commences the dell, through which lies the road to Villa Rica. It runs east and west, having on its northern side a bold, naked hill, and on the south a broken country. The stream which it follows, is rapid and powerful, giving motion to a set of flour-mills, and cheering with its waters some pleasant gardens which unite with whitened houses to adorn its banks. Crossing this stream, the road enters the city at the western end.

VILLA RICA.

VILLA RICA, the capital of Minas Geraes, dates its title as a town no further back than 1711, previously to which it bore the name of *Oiro Preto* (black gold), which is still retained by the mountain on the eastern declivity of which it is situated. It occupies two hills and part of the circumjacent valley or hollow. The streets leading from the lower part of the city to that on the high ground, are all paved, and are connected by four stone bridges. The principal street runs for nearly two miles in a straight line along the slope of the Morro. Mr. Luccock describes the first view as very attractive. "It looks like an assemblage of well-built white villages, perched upon salient points of the northern hill. On a nearer approach, it is discovered that these objects are only some of the churches and public buildings, and that the dwelling-houses lie in the hollows between them." The houses are built of stone, two stories high, and covered with tiles; the greater part are white-washed, indicating the prevalence of lime in the neighbourhood. Of 2000 houses which the place contains, one-fifth, it is supposed, may be good ones; the rest are slightly built. The public fountains, fourteen in number, are scattered through the town: they are, in general, noble structures, and are supplied with an abundance of pure water. The public

buildings are not without a claim to splendour, some of them having, Mr. Luccock says, a real air of grandeur unknown in other cities of Brazil. In front of the governor's palace, which is situated on the highest projection of the hill, is a groupe of which the inhabitants are particularly proud, formed by the town-house, the theatre, and the prison. The palace commands a fine view embracing almost the whole town: before it is an open space, surrounded by a sort of parapet, on which a few brass-swivels are mounted on carriages, to serve as cannon. In one of the lower parts of the town stands the treasury, attached to which are the mint and custom-house. There are ten churches, (two of them parish-churches,) several of which are richly ornamented, and contain paintings and images. One of the most richly furnished is built without windows, and the effect produced by the light of lamps only, during a splendid day, with an almost vertical sun, is described as very singular.

"The arrangement, furniture, and business of the theatre," says Mr. Luccock, "do not correspond to its external appearance. It stands on uneven ground, and is entered from behind, the lobby and boxes being on a level with the entrance. To the latter there was no admittance for a stranger of another nation; I descended, therefore, to the pit, and shall not easily forget the impression made upon my mind, when, looking down a long, narrow, dark staircase, I beheld the glare below: it seemed

> ——— 'a fiery gulf;
> A dismal situation, waste and wild:—
> A dungeon horrible, on all sides round,
> As one great furnace flamed.'

When arrived at the bottom, I found a small house, decently painted, and the pit full of very shabby, ill-looking people, many of them wearing *capotas*,—an habiliment

which is the favourite dress of thieves and murderers, and on that account, as well as on others, disgusting to one completely initiated into a knowledge of Brazilian modes. The assemblage around me was entirely unrelieved by the presence of women, for into that part of the house none of that sex are admitted. The men, notwithstanding their forbidding appearance, were civil, readily gave way, and furnished me with a comfortable seat. On the stage was seated a female, not on the floor and cross-legged, as is customary, but in a European chair, and sewing also in our mode; while a stiff figure of a man, with his eyes fixed on the ceiling, and his arms glued to his sides, was addressing another female in measured and unmoving tones; to which she replied with equal apathy and statue-like inflexibility. It was not possible to exhibit a more uninteresting scene, and other organs of sense being offended besides the eyes and ears, I left my station, and endeavoured again to obtain admission into one of the boxes, or at least into one of the passages behind them; but it could not be, and I quitted the house. This circumstance was remembered to my disadvantage, and, indeed, ruined my character in Villa Rica, as a man of taste."

Villa Rica is one of the most singularly situated places on the face of the earth. "Nothing less powerful than the love of gold," observes Mr. Luccock, "could have raised a large town on such a spot." The environs, unlike those of opulent towns in general, exhibit few signs of cultivation: not an acre of good pasture, nor an inclosure of any kind, is to be seen. Yet, though hidden in a narrow defile, and surrounded by mountains and unfruitful, stony campos, it has always been a favourite spot, to which not only Paulistas, but Portuguese have resorted in great numbers. No other town in the interior of Brazil, according to Dr. Von Spix, has so brisk a trade. Besides

the road to the capital and that by way of St. Joâo d'el Rey to St. Paulo, there are roads by Minas Novas to Bahia, and by St. Româo, Tejuco, and Malhada, to Paracutu, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso. Almost every week, large convoys set out with the productions of the country, cotton, hides, marmalade,* cheeses, precious stones, bars of gold, &c.; bringing back, in exchange, from the capital, salt, wines, calicoes, handkerchiefs, hams, iron-ware, and *new negroes*, to be employed in gold-washing, &c. "Till lately," says Mr. Luccock, "it enjoyed almost exclusively the trade to Goyaz and Cuiaba, which it now divides with St. John d'el Rey." Almost all kinds of trades are carried on here; the principal are saddlers, tinmen, and blacksmiths; there are likewise manufactories of gun-powder, hats, and pottery. There are no goldsmiths, that trade being prohibited. From the steepness of the streets, wheel-carriages would be almost as useless here as in Venice. As a substitute for them, a large vehicle like a sedan is used, carried by mules, instead of men: the workmanship is very clumsy. Owing, perhaps, in some measure, to the temperate climate, the people of this country are represented by Mr. Luccock as advanced a few steps in industry beyond most of their countrymen. "They spin and weave wool, worsted, and cotton; but their manufactories are purely domestic; their implements and modes of using them, of the oldest and most unimproved description. Perhaps, when the rage of mining is over, this district may become more wealthy from commercial establishments, of which these are the embryo, than from all the gold which it has ever collected. This, however, will be thought by some an extravagant estimate

* St. Bartholomew, an *arraial* and *freguezia*, eight miles to the west of Villa Rica, is famous for the large quantity of marmalade which it supplies.

of the value of manufactures, when it is known that, in little more than a hundred years, according to the entries at the smelting-house of Villa Rica, this place alone has sent into circulation *more than two millions of pounds troy-weight of gold.* When to this mass is added what has been issued from other places, may it not naturally be asked,—Where is it now ?"*

The population of Villa Rica is stated by Dr. Von Spix (1818) at 8,500 souls ; a very low number in proportion to the number of the houses, on the supposition that all are occupied.† Mr. Mawe, however, states, that when he visited the place in 1808, " of above 2,000 habitations, which the town contained, a considerable proportion was untenanted ; and the rents of the rest were continually lowering. Houses were to be purchased at one-half their real value : for instance, a house built a few years ago at 1000*l.* cost, would not now sell for more than 500*l.*" This traveller, however, strangely overrates the population when he makes it amount to 20,000. According to Mr. Luccock's representation, the numbers must be continually fluctuating. When the town becomes " dangerously full of vice and wretchedness," a curious expedient is stated to be resorted to for throwing off the scum of the population. " A report is circulated, that a remote spot has been dis-

* A partial answer to this question, so far as regards the application of this wealth in the first instance, is supplied by the fact, that the immense works of King John V., the aqueduct of Lisbon, and the convent of Mafra, were entirely raised with the royal fifth of Brazilian gold. At the end of the last century, from seventy to eighty arrobas of gold were annually smelted in Villa Rica ; but now the average does not exceed forty. For the purposes of smelting, sixty arrobas of corrosive sublimate of mercury are annually imported from Europe, at the cost of about 17*l.* per arroba.

† In St. Paulo, the population is about six inhabitants to a house ; (see vol. i. p. 229 ;) whereas this would give only four and a quarter.

covered in the woods, which is rich in the precious metal. The restless and adventurous soon become clamorous to resort to it; they assemble in crowds, and, under a leader of their own choice, proceed towards these new and unequalled mines. Some of them, tired of what seems useless travelling, halt by the way, and settle in different places. Others advance to the spot, or that which is supposed to be so, find its riches greatly exaggerated, yet remain there, and, ere long, call the country their own. Thus, Villa Rica is relieved, and new colonies are established. A scheme of this sort was set on foot in 1812, when about a thousand people departed in search of a 'golden league,' which some unknown traveller had seen two months' journey to the westward."

The appearance and manners of the *Villaricans* in general, are described by this traveller as extremely unprepossessing. The greater part of the population, he says, consists of blacks and mulattoes. Mr. Mawe says, there are more whites than blacks, but he probably includes some of mixed blood among the former. Dr. Von Spix states, that there is a considerable proportion of Portuguese. The men capable of bearing arms in the comarca, are divided into two regiments of auxiliary cavalry, fourteen companies of local militia of whites, seven of mulattoes, and four of free negroes. No monks are allowed to have a permanent residence here, the foundation of convents within the mining districts being expressly interdicted under the administration of Pombal, and the prohibition is said to be even now partially enforced.

Mr. Mawe describes the climate of Villa Rica as delightful; "perhaps equal to that of Naples." The thermometer, in the heat of summer, never rises above 82° (Fahrenheit) in the shade, and rarely falls below 48° (M. Von Eschwege says, not below 54°) in the winter: the usual range is from 64° to 80° in summer, and from

54° to 70° in winter. The greatest heats prevail in January. Owing to its great elevation, however, the temperature is subject to great alternations in the same day, and sudden thunder-storms are frequent. During the cold months, June and July, the sugar and coffee plantations are liable to be injured by night-frosts. The winds blow from various directions, and are never accompanied by great heat, but frequently by thick fogs, which envelope the summits of the neighbouring mountains. Mr. Mawe says, the dews and mist are often so dense as not to subside till the forenoon is advanced. As might be expected, therefore, the prevailing diseases are stated by Dr. Von Spix to be catarrh, rheumatism, inflammations of the throat and lungs, and violent cholic. The negroes are subject to elephantiasis.

The climate of the whole capitania is favourable to European fruits. The gardens of Villa Rica are laid out, Mr. Mawe says, with great taste, and, from the peculiarity of their construction, present a curious spectacle. "As there is scarcely a piece of level ground even ten yards square on the whole side of the mountain, the defect has been remedied by cutting spaces one above another at regular distances, and supporting them by low walls, the top of one being on a level with the base of that next above it. An easy flight of steps leads from one level to the other. These terraces seemed to me the very kingdom of Flora, for never did I before see such a profusion of delicate flowers. Here were also excellent vegetables of every kind, such as artichokes, asparagus, spinach, cabbage, kidney-beans, and potatoes. There are many indigenous fruits which might be much improved by a better system of horticulture. The peach appears to be the only exotic fruit which has been hitherto introduced; it flourishes amazingly. I have frequently seen the branches of the trees so loaded as to require perpendicular

support. Yet, the market of Villa Rica was but ill-supplied, notwithstanding the fertility of the district around it. Pulse and vegetables for the table were scarce; even grass was an article in great demand, and milk was as dear as it is in London. Poultry sold at from 3*s.* 6*d.* to 4*s.* 6*d.* per couple. Beef of a tolerable kind, but by no means good, might be had at 1½*d.* per pound. Pork was very fine; mutton was utterly unknown. Tallow was exceedingly dear, and candles were more than double the price at which they sell in this country."

This was in 1808. At the same period, English superfine woollens were to be had at from 30*s.* to 35*s.* per yard; coatings nearly as cheap as in England; common cotton prints at from 1*s.* 6*d.* to 2*s.* per yard; and Manchester goods in great plenty. There seemed, indeed, to be a glut of English merchandise,—the result of that desperate spirit of commercial adventure which issued in the ruin of so many of our traders and merchants about that period. Disastrous, however, as were the immediate effects, the permanent benefit arising from that forced circulation of the products of British industry, is incalculable. By anticipating, in the first instance, a demand which the state of society was not prepared to make, it has created new wants; and these wants will act as a stimulus on the productive energies of the country, thus eventually repaying our merchants by the indefinite extension of the market.

GOLD MINES OF VILLA RICA.

We are now in the very heart of the gold country, where Mammon has his throne.

> "This desert soil
> Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold."

Here flows the Brazilian Pactolus, the true Chrysorrhoas; and our readers will naturally expect a minute description of the extraordinary spot.

"To contemplate the mines of Villa Rica with advantage," says Mr. Luccock, "it will be necessary to recollect, that the land is composed of schist, or a sort of slaty clay, resting upon a core of granite, gneiss, or sand-stone, sometimes laminated, at other times solid, the gold being scattered in small particles amid the superjacent schist and clay;* and that the town is placed at the junction of

* This popular account of the geological phenomena is sufficiently correct, perhaps, for general readers; and Mr. Luccock, whose good sense is as conspicuous as his usual accuracy of observation, makes no pretensions to scientific precision. Dr. Von Spix, however, terms the superjacent stratum an *iron-stone flotz*, consisting partly of a clay, coloured red, more or less, by oxyde of iron, but principally of lithomarge, of a reddish brown colour, spotted, in many places, with lavender-blue and ochre-yellow. In this mass, there is a large quantity of compact, brown iron-stone; also, detached nodules of quartz, mica-slate, and, rarely, fragments of topazes. The gold in this formation is found either in very small grains and crystals within the layers of clay and lithomarge, or as a coating on brown iron stone, or imbedded in it in folia. This formation is prevalent, not only in Minas Geraes, but in St. Paulo, Goyaz, and Bahia, and is every where supposed to contain gold. Below this iron stone flotz, in the morro of Villa Rica, lies what M. Von Eschwege calls iron mica-slate, sometimes alternating with strata of decomposed and crumbly quartz. The stone often contains so much iron, that it may be smelted to advantage. A considerable quantity of gold is disseminated through this mica-slate, and, in particular abundance, through the quartz veins that traverse it. The greater part of the mountain consists of quartzy, granular mica-slate, or what Dr. Von Spix proposes to denominate quartz-slate. It was formerly known under the name of flexible sand-stone. This is incumbent on clay-slate, which seems to form the basis of the morro, and to rest on gneiss. Another formation, which generally contains a considerable quantity of gold, is described as a friable, rough-feeling, greasy mass of a greyish-green colour, consisting of a very fine-grained quartz and a smoky grey mica, with earthy-grey manganese ore, and forming a layer between the quartzy mica-slate and the clay-slate.

several streams, whose waters have only one outlet, by a narrow chasm cut by their force through the surface down to the more firm component parts. Before this outlet, called the Rio do Carmo, became so deep as it is, a small lake must have existed among the hills, through which all the waters of the upper country passed, bringing with them, and depositing in the bottom, a variety of heavy matter. Thus, the ground seems to have been gradually raised, while the outlet was deepened, until the water was entirely drained off, and left the bottom dry, in the form of a level plain, composed of all sorts of wreck, which, from the auriferous nature of the country, contained a considerable proportion of gold, both in the form of dust mingled with the attriturated schist, and imbedded in quartz as cascalho. The extent of this plain is from

M. de Humboldt, in his "Geognostical Essay on the Superposition of Rocks," has the following remarks on the quartz-rock formation:—

"On the table land of Minas Geraes, near to Villa Rica, (according to the excellent observations of M. d'Eschwege,) a mica-slate, containing beds of granular limestone, is covered by primitive clay-slate. On this latter rock reposes, in conformable stratification, the chloritous quartz which constitutes the mass of the Peak of Itacolumi, 1000 toises above the level of the sea. This formation of quartz contains alternating beds; 1. of auriferous quartz, white, greenish, or striped, mixed with talc-chlorite; 2. chlorite slate; 3. auriferous quartz mixed with tourmaline; 4. specular iron mixed with auriferous quartz. The beds of chloritous quartz are sometimes 1000 feet thick. The whole of this formation is covered with a ferruginous breccia, extremely auriferous. M. d'Eschwege thinks, that it is to the destruction of the beds we have just named, and which are geognostically connected, that the soil which is worked by means of washing should be attributed, containing gold, platina, palladium, and diamonds (Corrego das Lagens), gold and diamonds (Tejuco), and platina and diamonds (Rio Abaite). The decomposed chlorite-slate, from which the topaz is procured, belongs to this formation." See Humboldt on the Superposition of Rocks. London, 1823. pp. 117—18. See also Von Spix's Travels, vol. ii. pp. 185—190; and notes 3, 4, 5, 6; and, for some desultory remarks on the formation of gold, Luccock's Notes, pp. 463—6.

thirty to forty acres, and it is connected, by narrow passes, with others of a like size. The mountains surrounding this supposed ancient lake, rise from 700 to 1000 feet above its level; and on the declivity of the most northerly of them the city is built. In the sides of all of them, much gold is undoubtedly still detained, notwithstanding the quantity which has been washed down or gathered from them. The comparatively small plain above mentioned may, however, be considered as the swan which, through a succession of years, has laid golden eggs for the crown of Portugal. Its surface is only just even with the stream flowing through it; and after much rain, it is always flooded. A man then takes his station at the edge of the stream, which, with all contained in it, seems to be regarded as public property, and begins with a small hoe to open a trench, varying from one to three feet in breadth, and about six inches deep, carefully throwing up the earth on each side, so that no water may escape from it. He conducts his trench in any direction that suits him, provided the ground be not previously occupied by another adventurer; and at the end of it, raises a barrier, to prevent any weighty particles from being carried off. The water is generally let into these trenches early in the morning, and let off towards night; for their contents are esteemed too precious to be left to the risks connected with darkness. A fine black sediment is then carefully collected, and carried away in a bowl, to be washed at home. There cannot be a doubt that there is almost always more or less gold mingled in this mass; yet, I never could detect it on the strictest examination, and with the aid of a lens of high magnifying power. After the spot has been recently flooded, the inhabitants are said to turn out *en masse* to pursue the search, and do not desist until the whole impregnated surface is ransacked.

"On the side of the hill, which is steep, a different

method is adopted. Wherever a natural stream trickles down, its bottom is frequently and carefully searched; particularly where the current has met with any check, for there the precious metal is commonly detained. In parts where nature has provided no water, pits are dug and flanked with strong walls, or stoccades, through which a stream is turned from a distance. The surplus, running over the edge of the embankment, is generally received into a second pit below; sometimes into a third. At proper seasons, the pits are cleared of the water, the sediment is taken out, and treated as before mentioned. The waters are generally saturated with red clay; and by a repetition of these processes, the hill has been stripped of its soil, as well as verdure, wherever a stream can be conducted to carry it away. Numerous drifts also have been run horizontally into the softer parts of the mountain, until they entirely perforate the coating of schist or clay, and reach its solid core, while the water oozing through the mass above, is received into basins, together with the metal which it may convey. These drifts are seldom more than twenty yards long, five feet high, and three broad. Some of the smaller and softer hills of the vicinity have, indeed, been bored to a much greater extent; and I saw one which was completely perforated at its base. Whether larger or smaller, these openings are closed and secured with such precaution as plainly indicates the fear of plunderers."* Mr. Mawe compares the appearance of the mountain thus perforated in every direction, to a honeycomb.

Dr. Von Spix was conducted by M. Von Eschwege, the present director-general of the mines of Brazil, to the eastern declivity of the Morro of Villa Rica, which has hitherto yielded the greatest abundance of gold. "From the southern hill of the mountain," he says, "we passed through several gardens ornamented with fuchsia, near to

* Luccock's Notes, pp. 503–5.

the Hospicio de Jerusalem, and by the side of a deep trench to a naked ravine, irregularly rent, and full of masses of rock which had fallen down, presenting a picture of wild desolation. How great was our astonishment, when our friend signified to us that this was the rich gold-mine of Villa Rica! The mine in which we then were, belonged to Colonel Velozo, and is one of the oldest and most productive. Sieves and raw ox-hides were placed at certain distances, in trenches full of water, conducted from the summit; the first sieve to stop the coarser sand, and the latter to catch the gold dust in the hair, which stands erect.* Here and there we also saw detached trenches, in which the auriferous mud or sand collects. As soon as the rainy season commences, these simple preparations are put in motion. The former possessors always had their mine worked by several hundred slaves, and derived immense profit from it. At present, however, it seems to be much impoverished, so that but few gold-washers are employed in it, and the work is mostly left to free negroes for a daily payment of a patacca. This manner of obtaining gold from a public mine is called, *minerar a talha aberta.*"†

When this place was first discovered by the gold-hunters, it is said, that they had nothing more to do, than to pull up the tufts of grass or small plants on the side of the hill, and shake the precious dust from the roots. This seemingly romantic tale is by no means incredible. Mr. Luccock thus explains the phenomenon. "The steep slope of the mountain is covered with a coarse kind of grass or rushes in small clumps or bunches; hence, when rain falls heavily, little rills pass round and between the roots, and whatever of a ponderous nature they hurry downwards, must be detained wherever their rapidity is checked. This happens at every tuft of rushes which stands directly in the

* Sometimes woollen cloths are used; and the first English blankets sold by Mr. Luccock at Rio, were employed in this way.

† Von Spix, vol. ii. p. 59.

little water-course ; and hence these roots, I presume, have become rich in metal, and they had at that time been undisturbed for ages. Hence, those who pulled the grass would find the gold, and those who plucked a second crop, must as naturally be disappointed. As these streamlets descended the hill, collecting a greater quantity of water, they acquired more force, and formed for themselves, by tearing away the soil, a course with an irregular bottom, having hollows in the softer parts, which would exist in the form of basins, and the descending metal would be retained in them ; hence the formation of those little *caldeiraos* which often suddenly enriched an adventurer. A great quantity of the precious metal has doubtless passed on without impediment, and been collected in the lake below, or, buried mid the wreck with which it has been filled, must there remain until better methods of mining are adopted."*

The colour of the gold found here, varies from the most beautiful gold-yellow, to a reddish copper-colour, a bright yellow, and even a grey yellow. There is what is called *ouro branco* (white gold), which Mr. Luccock, however, supposes to be platina ; *ouro preto* (black gold), which appears in the form of a dark-coloured dust ; and what is called *ouro inficionado* (poisoned gold), which, though pure, is often pale or copper-coloured. The Morro of Villa Rica extends in a direction east and west, along the valley of the Ribêiro (stream) do Oiro Preto, or do Carmo, to Passagem, a village containing about a hundred and fifty houses, distant about two leagues from Villa Rica. Dr. Von Spix conceives the Morro to have been formerly connected with the lofty Itacolumi, and to have been separated from it by the power of the waters : it is covered here and there with low wood, and, to the very summits, with grass and bushes. All along the road to Passagem are seen cavities hewn in

* Luccock, p. 505.

the rock, shewing the construction of the exposed veins and nests of white quartz, from which thousands of cruzadoes have been extracted. There men have

> " Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands
> Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth
> For treasures, better hid,"—

Opening into the hill full

> —" many a spacious wound,
> And digg'd out ribs of gold."

" While looking at this spot," remarks Mr. Luccock, " and listening to the rapturous accounts which the people gave of the quantity of gold here collected, I was led to ask once more, What is become of all this treasure? Where are its fortunate proprietors? Where the permanent marks of their success? The only answer was, They are gone, and nothing remains. The grandfather began the work, and seemed to flourish. In the hands of the son, it declined. The grandchildren are sunk into poverty: the estate has been offered for sale, and no one will buy. In the name of common sense, then I replied, what have these people been doing? They have washed into yonder river all that was most valuable of their ground, and left it a bare rock. Would it not have been better to cultivate the soil, and, by improvements, to render it more and more productive? In that case, the family might still have been wealthy, and their descendants might have continued so for ages to come. After all, how superfluous this appeal! A search for gold becomes a mania, and it is generally incurable."

" *How like ye the gold from my fire?*" we may well imagine the demon of the country sarcastically exclaiming to the adventurers whom this execrable thirst (*auri sacra fames*) has led to violate the solitude of his mountain recesses. Hitherto it has proved to Brazil a fatal gift. No where does the axiom receive a more striking illustration, that gold is not wealth, than here, where " the precious bane"

has proved literally "the root of all evil," the source of indolence, vice, and the most abject wretchedness. Long after the mine has ceased to yield an adequate compensation for working it, "the grubbing for gold" is carried on with insane eagerness, to the injury of the country and the ruin of individuals. "The Villaricans," says Mr. Mawe, "totally neglect the fine country around them, which, by proper cultivation, would amply compensate for the loss of the wealth which their ancestors drew from its bosom. Their education, their habits, their hereditary prejudices, alike unfit them for active life. Perpetually indulging in visionary prospects of sudden wealth, they fancy themselves exempted from that universal law of nature which ordains that man shall live by the sweat of his brow. The successors of men who rise to opulence from small beginnings, seldom follow the example set before them, even when trained to it; how then should a Creolian, reared in ignorance and idleness, feel any thing of the benefits of industry? His negroes constitute his principal property; and them he manages so ill, that the profits of their labour hardly defray the expenses of their maintenance: in the regular course of nature, they become old and unable to work; yet, he continues in the same listless and slothful way, or sinks into a state of absolute inactivity, not knowing what to do from morning to night. This deplorable degeneracy is almost the universal characteristic of the descendants of the original settlers. Every trade is occupied either by mulattoes or negroes, both of which classes seem superior in intellect to their masters, because they make a better use of it."

All these rich parts of the province were formerly in the possession of the Indians, but they were soon expelled almost every where by the Paulistas. Those who still remain in Minas Geraes, have, for the most part, gradually retired into the mountainous region which runs along the

coast, extending inland to the breadth of from thirty to fifty miles. They consist chiefly of Coroadoes, Coropoes, Puries, Botucudoes or Aymores, and Goytacazes. On the western side of the province, beyond the Rio St. Francisco, detached wandering troops of Cayapoes are sometimes seen. With the exception of these and part of the Botucudoes, all these tribes have recognised the authority of the Government, and are kept in awe by several military stations on the borders of the forests. The most troublesome and most formidable enemy to the Mineiros, were, for a long time, the cannibal Botucudoes, who reside chiefly on the banks of the lower parts of the Rio Doce; but attempts have recently been made with success, to open a friendly communication with them for the purposes of trade. Dr. Von Spix has given an account of his visit to the Coroado Indians on the Rio Xipoto; and Prince Maximilian has furnished us with a minute description of the Botucudoes; but we shall reserve both for the description of the eastern coast.

MARIANNA.

EIGHT miles east-north-east of Villa Rica, is the episcopal city of Marianna, situated on the right bank of the Ribêiro do Carmo. The road leads along the Morro "into a beautifully romantic landscape, by the side of flowery slopes, adorned with masses of rock resembling magnificent ruins." Many small houses stand on the road-side, and the numerous travellers give this part of the country an appearance of prosperity and European activity. After passing the little hamlet Tacoaral, the road becomes a steeper descent, till it reaches Passagem. The gold-mines of this place were formerly very productive, but are now nearly abandoned, and the inhabitants live by the sale of provisions. At the bottom of the village, the stream is crossed by a small stone bridge, and the road again ascends the mountain,

from the summit of which is seen the city of Marianna lying in the flat valley, which is filled with fragments of rock rolled down by the Do Carmo. The first view of the place, as seen through the chasm in which the river flows, is described by Mr. Luccock as uncommonly pleasing. "Between barren rocks, whose sides produce a telescopic effect, a fine plain is discovered beyond them, bestrewed with houses and churches. As we advanced, the view naturally closed, until we ascended a hill forming one of the sides, from the brow of which it again opened upon us in a more expanded form. Just at hand was an unfinished church, dedicated to St. Peter, and, three hundred feet below us, the plain on which the city stands. Its churches crowned the small knolls and projections of the surrounding hills; the bishop's palace and gardens adorned the prospect on the right, and the college with its offices stretched beyond them. The city itself is nearly square, and consists principally of two well-paved streets, regularly laid out, and conducting to a sort of *plaza* or square. The houses, amounting to five hundred, have a cleanly look, arising from their being regularly whitened. The churches are neat, and among them is a spacious cathedral. It enjoys high ecclesiastical, as well as civil privileges; and seems destined, if no folly of men prevent its progress, to become hereafter the university of South America. The supply of water is ample, and greatly aids in the culture of many pleasant gardens, interspersed with the buildings. Their situation does not prevent them from exhibiting a luxuriant display of fruit and flowers. Beyond them, extend fine green meadows, through which the river runs, like a vein of silver; and around is a circle of mountains, enclosing and protecting the whole. There is in the place an unusual air of happiness, which I am inclined to attribute to its comparative freedom from the baneful spirit of mining."

The city was originally only an *arraial*, or station, bearing the same name as the stream. In 1711, John V. raised it to the rank of a town, in reward of its loyalty, under the title of *Villa Leal do Carmo* (Loyal Town of Carmo). In 1745, it was created an episcopal city by the same monarch, and received, as a mark of royal favour, the name of his queen. Since that time, it has been the residence of the bishop and chapter of Minas Geraes; but of late, owing, Dr. Von Spix imagines, to the mines in the neighbourhood having become less productive, it seems to be neglected by the neighbouring civil authorities in Villa Rica, which is assigned as the reason that the new cathedral is not finished. There are here, a Carmelite and a Franciscan convent,* and a theological seminary, at which most of the clergy of Minas are educated. The chapter is composed of fourteen canons, with twelve chaplains and four choristers. The diocese of the bishop does not extend over the whole province, several of the more northern districts being within the archiepiscopal see of Bahia.† The fixed revenue of the diocese is stated at 16,000 cruzadoes, but

* This appears to be an especial and solitary exception to the law which interdicts the residence of the religious orders within the mining districts.

† Dr. Von Spix calls this diocesan, bishop of Minas and bishop of Marianna. The latter is the more proper title. The first bishopric in Brazil was that of Bahia, founded in 1522, and raised to the rank of an archbishopric in 1667. The statement given at vol. i. p. 21, on the authority of Mr. Southey, must, therefore, be understood of the first bishop of Rio. That see was created in 1552; that of Pernambuco about the same period; and these diocesans, as well as those of Angola and St. Thome in Africa, were made suffragans of Bahia. "The bishopric of Maranham, from which, under John V., the bishopric of Para was separated, remained under the archbishopric of Lisbon, on account of the difficulty of the navigation between Maranham and Bahia. In 1744 and 1745, the new bishoprics of Marianna and S. Paulo, and the two extensive prelacies of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, were detached from the diocese of Rio de Janeiro."—*Von Spix*, vol. ii. 266.

it is supposed to amount, in fact, to twice that sum. That of the *juiz de fora* is 11,000 cruzadoes. The city contained in 1818, according to Dr. Von Spix, 4,800 inhabitants, who, together with those of the twelve surrounding parishes, form two regiments of cavalry, twenty companies of white infantry, ten of mulattoes, and five of free blacks. Being placed 500 feet below the site of Villa Rica, and surrounded with lofty eminences, the air is close and hot, and the climate less healthy.*

Five days' journey from Marianna, in an easterly direction, is the Presidio de St. João Baptista; a village of about thirty houses in the midst of thick forests, where resides the director-general of the Indian aldeas in that quarter. This journey was undertaken by Dr. Von Spix and his companion for the purpose of visiting the Coroadoes. The road leads over a projection of the Itacolumi, into a rich tract of wooded country, with few plantations. Large forest tracks are seen, which have been cleared, but have since been abandoned, and are now covered with thick brushwood. Except some trenches by the side of the road, where gold-washing has been carried on, and numerous crosses erected as monuments for persons murdered by fugitive negroes, there occurs nothing in this gloomy solitude to remind the traveller of man. After a journey of two leagues, Dr. Von Spix descended into a luxuriant valley watered by the Rio Mainarde, which flows into the Rio Doce, and reached, on the other side, a lonely venda, the proprietor of which employed some negroes at a neighbouring gold-washing. The next day

* M. Von Eschwege makes its elevation above the level of the sea, 398½ toises, which is 231½ lower than Villa Rica. Among the prevalent diseases are "erysipelas, slow fevers, dropsy, and diarrhœa. Syphilis," adds Dr. Von Spix, "is not less common here than in the rest of Minas."

conducted them to the fazendas of Oiro Fino, Dos Cristaes, and Coronel Texeira. The principal gold-works in this tract of country belonged to an ecclesiastic. The travellers passed the night at the house of another ecclesiastic, whom they found surrounded with many half-white women and children, and "whose library was limited to *Ovidius de Arte Amandi.*" This young priest seemed to Dr. Von Spix, "a worthy counterpart to the hermit in the Decameron." On the third day, after passing several handsome fazendas, seated on the hills, between which winds the Ribeiro do Bacalhâo, they reached a small village, inhabited chiefly by mulattoes and negroes, formerly called Barra do Bacalhâo, but now, St. Anna do Ferros. At this place, the Bacalhâo, and soon after, the Rio Turbo, join the Rio Piranga, which runs to the north-east, and together with the Ribeiro do Carmo, contributes to form the Rio Doce. "Even in this remote spot," says Dr. Von Spix, "we found traces of European manners and civilisation. The venda was furnished not only with some of the most necessary provisions, such as bacon, sugar, brandy, maize, flour, but also with cottons, lace, iron-wares, and similar articles. In the evening, the captain of the place, a Portuguese, as a special mark of attention, brought us some fresh bread which he had baked for us, of wheat flour." The next day, passing near the venda *das duas Irmaos* (the two brothers), at the confluence of the Turbo and the Piranga, they rode over a mountainous and woody country to Capella de St. Rita, situated in an elevated and pleasant valley. "A much more fatiguing journey," continues this traveller, "awaited us the next day. We had scarcely traversed the well-watered valley, when we stood before the entrance of a forest, into which the sun appeared never to have penetrated. The gneiss and granite formation, which here basks out in several places, with the character

of the vegetation, reminded us still more than before, that we had passed again from the alpine district of mica and clay-slate, and from the open campos, into the region of the Serra do Mar. The path grew so narrow that one mule could scarcely go behind the other; the forest became gloomy as the Inferno of Dante; and the way, growing narrower and steeper, led in mazy windings on the edge of deep precipices, traversed by impetuous torrents, and here and there bordered with detached rocks. The horrors with which this savage solitude filled our souls, was enhanced by the apprehension of an attack of wild animals or hostile Indians, which occupied our imaginations with the most gloomy ideas and melancholy forebodings. Our joy therefore was inexpressible, when we reached the other side of the mountain of the Serra de S. Geraldo, and saw the glimmer of daylight gradually penetrate. After we had conquered a part of the way, which descended precipitously and resembled a ravine, we overlooked a forest of prodigious extent, bounded towards the south-west by the Serra da Onca, which is likewise covered with wood. We had scarcely descended into the wide plain between these two mountain chains, which chiefly consist of gneiss, and are about 2,500 feet high, when we were surprised by seeing in the narrow path two human figures. They were both naked, and their jet black hair hung over their shoulders. They crept along with short step and necks contracted, looking sometimes to the right and sometimes to the left. The man went first, carrying a bow and arrow in his left hand, and had a bundle of arrows hanging over his shoulders. The woman, with the older children, followed him, and carried on her back a basket made of palm-leaves, which was fastened by a band to her forehead, and contained the domestic utensils, their provisions, such as maize, mandiocca, Spanish potatoes, an earthen pot, &c. Upon it

sat a little child, a few months old, which had its arms around its mother's neck. Scarcely had we perceived each other, when they hurried into the forest, and disappeared.

"When we had reached the first fazenda in the plain, we met with several of these Indians, some with, and some without weapons, who appeared to live upon good terms with the mulattoes and negroes here. We went up to them and saluted them in a friendly manner; they, however, turned aside silent and distrustful, but at length accepted the glass beads, knives, and other presents which were offered them. Even the brown and black inhabitants seemed not pleased with our arrival, so much did they participate with the Indians in the savageness and rudeness of the place. We therefore found ourselves very uncomfortably situated in this company, and passed a sleepless night, not without apprehensions of a surprise, in a barn, which did not afford either us or our effects sufficient protection from the rain which poured down in torrents. A thick fog still covered the high trees of the forests, when we set out on the following morning for the Presidio de S. Joâo Baptista, the intended termination of our journey, which we reached at noon."

ENVIRONS OF VILLA RICA EASTWARD.

Mr. Mawe gives an account of a journey which he took for the purpose of visiting two estates belonging to the Conde de Linhares, distant forty miles from Villa Rica. At three miles from Marianna, he passed through Alto da Chapada, a small village on an elevated plain. Passing over the mountain, he then descended to the bed of the Rio do Carmo, where it is "as large as the Thames at Windsor," and soon after passed a straggling village which he calls St. Giatanha. Three miles further, he

halted for the night at the fazenda of Lavras Velhas. The next day, he passed *Morro das Arrêaes*, and proceeding through a fine country, reached the Rio de San Joze, where it washes the base of the Altos de St. Miguel. Here are vestiges of one of the oldest and most extensive gold-washings, which yielded much treasure to its discoverer and proprietor, Senhor Mathæus Barboza. "I expressed some surprise," says Mr. Mawe, "at observing no good dwelling-houses in a district which formerly produced so much wealth; and was informed, that the first miners, eager to take the cream of the gold to as large an extent as they could, seldom remained long on the same spot, contenting themselves with building sheds, or *ranchos*, to serve for their temporary residence." Descending from the heights, Mr. Mawe entered on the estate belonging to the then prime minister of Brazil, the descendant of the original proprietor.* It is called fazenda do Barro, and is described as in the midst of a most enchanting country. The river San Joze runs in front of the house. At the distance of seven miles is the fazenda de Castro, "situated near the confluence of the Ribeiro do Carmo and the Rio Gualacho, which form the San Joze, a river as large as the Thames at Battersea." Four miles further, pursuing the course of the river, is the aldea of St. Joze de Barra Longa, containing about 400 inhabitants, and situated on the very confines of the territory inhabited by the Botucudoes. The gold with which this district abounded, was the temptation that led the first

* Senhor Mathæus Barboza, a settler of great respectability, who took up these lands, and expelled the aborigines, in the early part of the last century, had an only daughter, whom he sent to Portugal to be educated, and who, at his death, inherited his immense wealth. She was married in Lisbon to a gentleman of the family of Souza, and from her descended the Conde de Linhares, and another nobleman of the same name.

settlers to plant themselves in this exposed and dangerous station. About two leagues from this village is the arraial of Piranga, situated near the river of the same name, which, at a distance of four leagues, Mr. Mawe says, joins the San Joze, and with it forms the Rio Doce. "Piranga is perhaps more exposed to the attacks of the Indians, than St. Joze; but there are some gold-washings in its neighbourhood, which tempt the inhabitants to brave the danger. A small band of horse-soldiers is stationed here, to parade the confines, enter the woods, and go in quest of the natives whenever information is given. Yet, notwithstanding these precautions, the village is never in perfect security." Piranga, according to Cazal, is twenty miles south-east of Villa Rica.*

It is singular, that neither the river San Joze, mentioned by Mr. Mawe, nor the Rio Turbo, mentioned by Dr. Von Spix, is noticed by Cazal. The Doce is stated to have its origin in the Serra Mantiqueira. "After flowing for a considerable space to the north-north-east under the name of Chopoto, it receives the Piranga from the Serra of Oiro Branco; afterwards the Guallacho, formed by two streams of the same name, which issue from the Serra of Oiro Preto. At this confluence, it inclines to the east, and gathers the Bombaca and the Percicaba, which flow from the west, and have their sources in the Serra Lapa. Here it takes the name under which it enters the ocean. A little lower, it is joined on the left by the considerable river St. Antonio. Ten miles further, it is joined, on the same side, by the Corrente, which flows from Serro Frio, with a course of more than a hundred miles. Thirty miles lower,

* Mr. Mawe places it at double that distance to the *north-east*; but, in the more correct map of the eastern coast given by Prince Maximilian, it is placed agreeably to the statement given in the text. The Piranga evidently joins the Do Carmo south of the Guallacho that is, nearer its source.

it receives the large Sassuhy, whose heads emanate from the serras of Serro Frio and Esmeraldas; afterwards, the Laranjeiras; a little below, the Cuyate, the largest of those which enter it on the right; and finally the Manhuassu."* It is often difficult to determine which branch of a river has the best claim to be considered as its source. The Guallacho is, possibly, another name for the San Joze of Mr. Mawe, which he states to be formed by the Do Carmo and the Guallacho; and the Chopoto is apparently the Do Carmo. Both of these streams issue from the serra of Oiro Preto, and flow southward. The Piranga, originating further southward, and gathering the waters of the Rio Turbo and the Bacalhâo, would seem to join the Do Carmo on the southern bank, previously to its confluence with the Guallacho on the northern side. But it is difficult to make out any consistent statement from the perplexed and very imperfect information we at present possess relative to the geography of these parts.

TOPAZ MINES OF CAPAO.

During his residence at Villa Rica, Dr. Von Spix made several excursions in different directions. One of these, by way of Capâo to the neighbourhood of Congonhas do Campo, supplies us with very interesting matter.

Capâo† has already been mentioned as the place which furnishes the Brazilian topaz. What is called the topaz-mine, is nothing more than an open quarry, which is thus described by Mr. Mawe. "After walking about half a mile up the mountain, I was shewn two breaks or slips, in which my guide informed me were the topaz-mines. We entered one of them, which was in extent little short

* Henderson's Brazil, p. 264.

† Written by Mr. Luccock, *Chapaom* and *Chapon*.

of two acres. The argillaceous schistus, which formed the upper stratum, appeared in a variety of stages, the greater part migrating into micaceous schistus. In one part, I observed two negroes poking in the little soft veins which the slips disclosed, with a piece of rusty iron, probably part of an old hoop; and on inquiring what they were about, I was informed they were the miners searching for topazes. I took one of their instruments, and on using it as they did, found these veins to contain a very minute micaceous substance approaching to earthy talc, also some quartz, and large crystals of specular iron ore. I had the good fortune to find two or three topazes, which, as they had only one pyramid each, and appeared fractured, I judged to be out of their original place. It had hitherto been my opinion, that all the topazes which I had seen at Rio de Janeiro, or elsewhere, and which were of similar form to these, had been broken from the matrix by the miners; I now, therefore, fully expected to meet with some having double pyramids; but, to my great disappointment, all that I found were entirely detached. From a great quantity (at least a cart-load) of inferior topazes which were afterwards shewn to me in the owner's house, (and any number of which I might have taken away,) I could not select one with a double pyramid. They informed me that sometimes, but very rarely, topazes have been found attached to quartz; but even in these instances, the quartz was fractured, and out of its original place. The topazes which were shewn me, were very imperfect and full of flaws."

These precious stones are found in three different places. The mine which Dr. Von Spix examined, was a hill immediately behind the fazenda of Lana, which, on one side, for a considerable breadth, and to a height of sixty feet, had become so softened by rains and by water conducted upon it by art, that it had become like a marsh.

"We found the owner and his slaves," he says, "busy in looking for topazes. The soil is thrown up into long heaps with shovels, and washed by means of water conducted over it into a narrow channel, with some wooden lattices fixed in it, so that only the more solid parts remain behind, which are then broken with hoes and with the hands in search of topazes. These harder parts of the decomposed formation are the fragments of white quartz, often quite friable, sometimes mingled with detached rock-crystals, and are often accompanied with a white or brown ferruginous porcelain earth. The latter, which is here called massa branca, is the surest indication of the presence of topazes, which lie loose and scattered in it, as well as (though more rarely) among the broken and decomposed quartz. The workmen give the name of mala-cacheta to the fine softened mica of a yellow and pinchbeck-brown earth, which one is tempted to call earthy talc. Topazes are found in it, but less frequently than in the broken remains of veins; and they have been observed, not only in the softened parts of the formation, but, as for instance at Capâo, also in that which is still solid. The vein of quartz, filled with porcelain earth, and containing the topazes, commonly runs between rifts of earthy talc, which is distinguished by its colour and compactness from that lying near it, and is called Formacâo, The quartz vein, which, on account of the mobility of the whole mass, does not always preserve the same direction, but at the time of our visit ran from north to south, is from one inch to a foot and a half or more in thickness, and is carefully followed by the workmen. It frequently widens into large nest-like expansions, which present nothing but sterile broken quartz without topazes. The latter are also found, but very seldom, combined with the quartz rock or rock-crystal, in general broken at one extremity: we were never able to find, even in the mine,

any with crystals terminated by planes at both extremities. The topaz miners have a custom very unfavourable to the crystallographer, which is, to endeavour to prepare each stone for cutting, by knocking off the impure particles with the hammer, or entirely dividing pieces which have flaws.

"The size of the stones is very various: the workmen affirmed that pieces have been found as large as a fist. The natural colour is manifold, sometimes greyish, sometimes bright-yellow, and sometimes a mean between this and carnation of different shades, very rarely dark-red. The stones which are found in the mala-cacheta are said to be the lightest. The inhabitants understand how to give to the topazes an artificial colour, particularly rose colour, by means of heat. The number of topazes annually found here is very considerable, and may amount to about fifty or sixty arrobas: this quantity, however, is not always pure and fit for polishing; on the contrary, a great part of them are of so imperfect a colour and so full of flaws, that they are thrown away as useless. The octava (a gold weight) of the inferior sort of the stones fit for cutting, is sold at 320 rees; of the best, at 2,000 rees. Remarkably large, beautiful, and brilliant stones are sold upon the spot at from twenty to thirty piastres. The greater part of these topazes is exported from this place to Rio de Janeiro, a smaller portion to Bahia; and in both places, so great a quantity has been accumulated within a few years, that the prices there are lower than at the mine itself. Together with the topaz, the euklase is also found here, and has attracted the attention of the Mineiros since mineralogists have inquired after it. This stone in general is scarce, and is more frequent in the mine of Capão than in that of Lana."*

* Von Spix's Travels, vol. ii. p. 164—7.

LEAD MINE OF CUJABEIRA.

FIVE leagues to the west of Capâo, is the iron-foundery of De Prata, established by M. Von Eschwege under the auspices of the Conde de Palma. The intermediate tract of country consists of beautiful hilly campos, richly diversified, but almost totally destitute of inhabitants. The establishment produces annually about a thousand arrobas of iron. "The ore is a rich iron-glance, but particularly magnetic iron-stone, the very thick beds of which stand out near the foundery." The rock is mica-slate.

A league and a half to the south-south-east of De Prata, are the gold and lead mines of Senhor Romualdo Joze Monteiro do Barros, which it was the object of Dr. Von Spix's journey in this direction to visit. The gold-mine is a cream-coloured clay-slate traversed by auriferous veins of quartz. "The metal is disseminated in the friable quartz, which is covered, on its rifts, with an earthy coat containing manganese, in such small particles, that they frequently cannot be distinguished by the naked eye. The vein is in some places uncommonly rich in this metal. From a piece of quartz of the size of a fist, which was broken off by the hammer, a negro obtained by washing, in our presence, a visible quantity of very fine gold dust, worth 100 rees. The clay-slate too, which is frequently coated on the rifts with black, dendritic manganese, contains gold; but, in this mine, they work only the quartz veins."

The mine in which the chromate of lead was discovered, called the mine of Cujabeira, is in a low hill of clay, scarcely a league distant from the fazenda. "We in vain searched," says Dr. Von Spix, "among the *debris*, to find a few tolerably large pieces of this fossil, till Senhor Monteiro conducted us to a small *adit* which he had just opened. Here, we had the pleasure of observing the red-lead ore in a vein of friable, greyish-white, granular quartz, among

pretty much disintegrated, white, scaly, lithomarge, of the thickness of a few inches to a foot. The quartz, which forms the matrix, is here and there of a lemon-colour, and traversed with brown oxyde of iron. The crystals of the chromate of lead are very small, and seldom shew well-defined terminal planes: they form rather oblique four-sided prisms, with sharp, bevilled ends, and agree in the chief characteristics with the Siberian. In the vicinity of the red crystals, there is not unfrequently an earthy coat of yellowish-green lead ore. On the whole, the mode of occurring, as well of the red, as of the green chromate of lead at Cujaberia, perfectly coincides with that at Beresof, on the Ural, in Siberia, which grows in quartz veins in the talc-rock, mixed with grains of quartz. The resemblance of the lithomarge of Cujabeira to that of Capâo, in which the topazes are found, appears the more worthy of remark, because Pallas mentions, that topazes are likewise found, single and collected, in drused cavities, at Beresof in Siberia, in the gold veins."*

Not far from this estate is the arraial of Matozinho, visited by Mr. Luccock in returning from Marianna to St. Joâo d'el Rey. He describes it as a clean, lively, little town, composed of about 150 houses with several churches, hanging on the northern bank of the Paraopeba, in front of Congonhas, " in the same manner that Gateshead does with respect to Newcastle-upon-Tyne." The river flowing between the two towns, is about seventy yards wide, has a good wooden bridge across it, and separates the two comarcas of Villa Rica and the Rio das Mortes. Congonhas, (written by Mr. Luccock *Caancunha*, i. e. " woman of the forest," the name being derived from a medicinal plant,) situated upon the steep bank of the river, presents a very pleasing object when viewed from the north. It contains about 200 houses and several chapels, one of which, though

* Von Spix, vol. ii. pp. 272—4, and 291.

small in dimensions, vies, in splendid ornaments, with any ecclesiastical edifice in the country. It formed the object of this traveller's visit, and may be considered, on more accounts than one, as

THE LORETTO OF BRAZIL.

"It is not," we are told, "in its exterior, that this church makes such high pretensions; yet, its appearance is respectable. The stone used in its construction is hard, with a slaty texture and a greenish colour; and the masses composing the walls and pavement, are large and well cut. Standing on the brow of a considerable elevation, it is reached by a double flight of broad steps, which meet in a platform, connected with a spacious paved area, in the front of which is a handsome stone balustrade. Within the area are twelve statues, about eight feet high, intended to represent the prophets of the Jewish church. They are well executed, their costume appropriate, their attitudes various; and each holds a scroll, on which is engraved, in Latin, and in an ancient letter, a striking passage from his own writings. It is said, that they are the production of an artist who had no hands; that the hammer and chisel were fastened to his stumps by an assistant, and in that manner their most delicate cutting was executed. One circumstance slightly supports the credibility of this story: the stone of which the statues are formed, is of the soft and saponaceous kind, which abounds in the quarries of the neighbourhood, and appears to harden from exposure to the air.

"But the internal wealth and decoration of this church are the things which give it most celebrity. The walls are divided into rows of compartments, of which the upper ones are filled with good paintings, representing portions of the history of Jesus Christ, from his birth to his crucifixion, and the lower with pictures, in a less relieved style,

of several detached religious subjects. Round the bottom of the arched roof, are representations of the state of innocence, of sin, and regeneration; and above them, some historical pieces from the Old Testament. The great altar is exceedingly splendid, and over it, covered with a glass case, is a small image of Our Lady, most exquisitely cut from a stone of the country, of the purest white, probably quartz or feldspar. The altars of particular saints are, also, highly ornamented with polished stones of Brazil, of different colours, white, green, red, and variegated. A small organ, gaudily painted, is placed over the principal entrance, and in various parts are distributed lamps, the donations of the pious, some of them of silver, others of cut glass. The conservatory has, in its ceiling, an excellent portrait of Pope Pius the Sixth.

"Close by the church, yet separate from it, is the house of miracles, consisting of one large room, and containing some hundreds of paintings, models, and tablets, memorials of cures performed and deliverances granted. There are in it, also, four statues of wood, which are carried in religious processions: one of them, that of the Converted Centurion, is really a fine piece of carving. My companions were not pleased, that this should receive higher admiration than the multitude of clumsy models of heads and limbs, and of miserable daubings, with which it was surrounded; and the cicerone, who was in a priest's habit, seemed particularly anxious to correct my pitiable ignorance, and rouse my attention to proper objects. With all the preface which might have introduced the last judgement, and with a solemnity worthy of that subject, he told me, that Our Lady had lately granted a very singular favour, having communicated to some distinguished individual, an infallible method—of destroying ants. I could not but acknowledge that this was an object worthy the interposition of the blessed Virgin herself, in a region

where there are more ants than leaves, where these insects are sometimes more than an inch long, and cannot be kept from intruding into the most sacred places, not even from making their abode among the petticoats of Our Lady herself; nor could I fail to be curious as to the modes which she had deigned to prescribe. These were, to inflame a quantity of sulphur, near the apertures to their nests, and to fill the hollow dome with its fumes, by means of an instrument never heard of before. This new, celestial machine, he described minutely, and, by his imitation of the motion of the hands in using it, made me clearly comprehend that it was no other than an English pair of bellows. To be longer grave, though on holy ground, was impossible; and I advised him, the next time the Virgin interfered in the affair, to whisper in her ear, that gunpowder would answer the same purpose much more effectually, which the heretics knew by experience, long before her Ladyship manifested any concern about the business. Still he maintained, that the instrument was a gift becoming the first favourite in heaven; and remained utterly faithless, when assured that it had long been conferred on almost every cottager in Britain. He would converse no longer; and I, too, thought it high time to be silent, recollecting the poor wanderer at Coral Novo, and his incredible story of English glass windows.*

* This alludes to a poor fellow who, having worked for a few months in London as a harness maker, till sent to South America by the Portuguese consul, had carried thither such extraordinary accounts of what he had seen in England, as to excite an incredulity fatal to his own character for veracity. Among other incredible things, he had said, that all the houses, even those of the poor, in England, had glass windows, and that the whole country was like one continued town, except that the buildings stood more thickly in some places than in others. "How," it was asked by those who had never seen a glazed window, "can those people be poor, who cover their windows with glass, a substance which with us is almost as valuable as gold, and more valuable, weight for weight, than

"Seldom have I met with so thorough a Catholic devotee as this man. Had he lived a few ages earlier, and been allowed a wider stage on which to figure, he could hardly have missed the honour of canonisation. He was a native of Caancunha, and had seldom gone beyond its precincts; he had taken an early vow never to leave this church, and was ignorant of all extraneous matters, things unconnected with his own chosen and perpetual abode. In him, faith had blotted out almost every trace of reason and judgement, to a degree which might justly render him an object of unqualified wonder to a thinking European.

"Behind the church is another sacred singularity,—a garden in imitation of Paradise, where Adam and Eve, beneath the Cross, are sitting beside a fountain, in all the nudity of innocence. They are surrounded by a multitude of birds and beasts, of a domestic, and of a wild and savage kind. It is observable how many absurdities the contriver has introduced into so confined a scene; but they seem no longer in vogue, for the place is falling into complete dilapidation."

From Congonhas, Mr. Luccock proceeded in a west-south-west direction, winding round to the S., to Suá-suí, a village containing about fifty houses; and the following day, twenty-five miles in a southerly direction brought him, by way of a place called Olho das Agoas, to Lagoa Dourada. "The morro on which this town stands," says Mr. Luccock, "is unconnected with any other, and when viewed at a distance, appears exceedingly rough. On gaining its summit, I was surprised to see a thick wood, through which the road passed, while all the lower

silver is? and how can people find water whose houses are scattered over all the country? We have only four or five towns in as many hundred miles, and yet Brazil has too many inhabitants, for some of us are obliged to go into the Sertaôs or depths of the forests, to find new land."

grounds are perfectly naked. The town is placed in a sort of ravine, full four hundred feet deep. It contains about two hundred whitened houses, of an ordinary kind, some of a smaller description, and a few which are no better than huts. It has three churches, and seven chapels; an ample provision, surely, for the public devotions of about two thousand inhabitants. They subsist by the produce of gold mines, and seem to have laboured with greater success than many of their neighbours; for, in no place north of St. John d'el Rey have I noticed so many appearances of comfort. Yet, the people in general too plainly shewed themselves to be ignorant, vain, and idle, though not without their share of curiosity."

From this spot, streams flow northward to the St. Francisco, eastward to the Rio Doce, and westward to the Paraguay. It is supposed to be the highest ground in the comarca. From Lagoa Dourada to St. Joâo d'el Rey, is a distance of twenty-four miles, the direction south by west, the descent about 800 feet. The approach in this direction is described as exceedingly fine: "the scene wants only more wood on the lofty downs which skirt the dells, to become quite enchanting."

EXCURSION TO SERRA CARACA.

ANOTHER excursion made by Dr. Von Spix, was to the village or arraial of Antonio Perreira, so called from its founder; distant (according to Cazal) eight miles to the N. E. of Marianna. After passing the stony ridge of the morro of Villa Rica, he passed, at about a league's distance, the Rio das Velhas, here an inconsiderable stream. It has its source in the vicinity of St. Bartholomew, * six miles west of Villa Rica, and after a winding

* Dr. Von Spix says, five leagues to the north of Villa Rica, but this we suspect to be a typographical error, since Bento Rodri-

course of more than 200 miles, interrupted by many falls, during which it gathers the waters of the Parauna, the Pardo, and the Curmatahy on the right, and the Bicudo on the left, it joins, near St. Romão, the Rio de St. Francisco. The gold mines of Antonio Perreira were very productive a few years ago; but the mine was closed, and the work stopped, by the falling in of a shaft sixty feet deep, which buried fourteen workmen. The whole mountain is of the same geological character as the auriferous morro of Villa Rica. In the pleasant valley not far from the village, there is a natural grotto,—a singular curiosity in Brazil, which has been converted into a small chapel of *Nossa Senhora da Lapa*. Here, every Sunday, mass is chanted, and a festival is held annually on the 15th of August. The roof is overspread with stalactites. The rock is termed by Dr. Von Spix, a very compact light-grey calcareous stone, probably primitive limestone; it sometimes shews on its rifts a mammillated coating of sulphur. To the north-west of the village, M. Von Eschwege had recently established a small iron-foundery: the rock is rich enough to supply all Minas with iron, yielding from 60 to 80 per cent. A mountainous country, for the most part covered with the "auriferous, stratified, iron-stone formation," and exhibiting numerous trenches and open mines, extends in a north-easterly direction to the village of Bento Rodriguez, a distance of between two and three leagues. "Every thing indicates," says Dr. Von Spix, "that the prosperity of this district is past, and nothing remains but scattered fragments of its former opulence. The houses are ruinous, miserable within, and the inhabitants look very wretched." A few miles further is the larger village

guez, which is stated to lie about two leagues and a half north-east of the iron-foundery of Perreira, is but three leagues north of Marianna. It is observable, that Cazal computes all the distances from the ecclesiastical metropolis of Minas, not from Villa Rica.

of Inficionado, distinguished as the birth-place of the only epic poet which Brazil has yet produced,—Father Duraô, author of CAMURURU (the "Man of Fire"), in which is celebrated the discovery of Brazil.* The place contained, at the time of Mr. Mawe's visit, full 1500 inhabitants. Here Dr. Von Spix passed the night, and, on the following morning, set out for Innocenzio, the fazenda of the *guarda mor*,† on the Serra do Caraça (large-face); "so called from having a portion of it similar to an enormous physiognomy." It extends nearly three leagues N. and S., and towers above all its neighbours with its bold, rugged outlines. Mr. Henderson describes it as "a dismemberment of the grand cordillera:" its base is fifty miles in circuit, and it is steep and craggy all around. From the fazenda, which resembles at a distance a magnificent fort, there is a fine prospect of the arraial of Catas Altas beneath, the Serra de Itaberava, rich in amethysts, and the singular granite peak of Itambe in the distance. The gold-mine of Innocenzio had been worked for eighty years, and yet, still employed eighty negroes. The rock abounds also with iron.

There was a solemnity in the manner of the venerable old senhor, the guarda mor, which reminded Dr. Von Spix of the Quakers. "In fact," he says, "he belonged to the sect of the Sebastianistas, who expect the return of King Sebastian who was slain in the battle of Alcazar against the Moors, and, with his return, the most glorious epoch of the Portuguese monarchy. The followers of this sect, who are distinguished by their industry, frugality, and benevolence, are more numerous in Brazil, and particularly in Minas Geraes, than even in the mother coun-

* "Camururu: Poema Epico do Descubrimento da Bahia. Composta por Fr. Jose de S. Rita Duraô. Lisboa. 1781. 8vo." For the history of Camaruru, see vol. i. p. 13.

† The guarda-mores are a sort of surveyors-general.

try. Senhor Innocenzio endeavoured to convince us out of a great number of manuscript prophecies, of the approaching happiness of Brazil. We assured him, without, however, hoping for the return of Don Sebastian, that Brazil was advancing to the period of its greatest prosperity."*

The next morning, after his guests had attended a solemn mass in the beautiful private chapel attached to his establishment, the worthy Sebastianista sent a mulatto to attend them to the Hospicio (or monastery) *da Mâi dos Homens* (mother of men), on the summit of the mountain, taking leave of them with cordial benedictions. This singular spot claims a particular description.

"The road led up the west side of the mountain, over grassy slopes, intersected by numerous trenches. The landscape gradually became more bare and rugged; numerous plants of singular forms grew on the lonely, rocky path; gloomy wooded hills and ravines alternated with smiling pastures; or dazzling white rocks, and streams rushing between thick enclosures of ferns, *aroideæ*, and *orchideæ*, invited to repose. At length, proceeding by a narrow path through thick, low wood, we came to an elevated valley, closed like an amphitheatre, in which the cheerful building of the Hospicio struck our view. All nature here breathes content, and an inexpressible feeling

* Mr. Luccock's guide to St. Joâo d'el Rey, Jose Correio Pinto, was one of this singular sect. "He was a sincere, but not an obtrusive religionist," says Mr. L.; "and more than once, in the stillness of the night, was I awaked by the low murmurs of the people whom, as he thought, he had called unobserved to prayers. I believe him to be a less violent, but more conscientious Sebastianista than some others whom I intimately knew. They form a sect among the Portuguese Catholics, who as devoutly expect the return of the royal St. Sebastian, as the Jews expect their Messiah, or the Christians the re-appearance of their Lord."—*Notes, &c.* p. 455.

of tranquillity and calm pleasure fills the mind of the traveller.

"We ascended a flight of broad stone steps to the convent, which, even at a distance, seems to announce, through the crown of waving palms which overshadow it, that here is a secure retreat for the unhappy, a peaceful asylum for him who is weary of life. No place on earth is more calculated to disengage the mind from worldly inclinations and cares, than this secluded abode of pious contemplation. The traveller more willingly indulges in the agreeable impressions which the place excites, because they are very rare in a country so thinly peopled, and where the arts are in so low a state. The Hospicio de Nossa Senhora Mâi dos Homens stands as the triumph of the persevering piety of a single man, who, in 1771, commenced the building with charitable donations, and, by degrees, adorned the church with paintings, carving, gold, silver, and precious stones. The venerable hermit, a native of Portugal, and above a century old, was still alive. He was much rejoiced at having been visited in this solitude by Europeans. As he was no longer able to direct the assistance of other brethren, none of whom were here at the time, it was confided to an administrator sent by the Government. They received us with much cordiality, and we were surprised to find clean beds, table-linen, and other conveniences in abundance. The establishment has already acquired some property by pious donations. Eight negro slaves cultivate the land in the vicinity, or attend to the horned cattle, which thrive here admirably. The butter made here excels in taste and sweetness that of the Swiss Alps. In the neighbourhood of the convent, there are several kinds of European fruit-trees, such as cherries, quinces, apples, chestnuts, and olives; but these last, notwithstanding the cool and elevated situation of the places, bear no fruit. The treasures of this beautiful mountain

valley keep the naturalist in a continued transport. The forms of the plants here are incredibly diversified and beautiful. On the first day, we gathered near a hundred kinds of plants before unknown to us. In the evening, when returning from our excursions, a new pleasure awaited us, when, from the terrace before the convent, we saw the bright disk of the moon rise above the mountain, or the serene sky gradually illuminated with the constellations of the southern firmament. The call of the vesper bell in the romantically beautiful mountain valley, awakened in our souls a mixture of the most soothing sensations, uniting the recollection of our distant country with the enjoyment of the beauties which surrounded us.

"We reluctantly quitted this paradise after a stay of two days, and ascended the chief peak of the mountain, in order to descend on the east side to Inficionado. This road, too, offered, at every step, new objects and new attractions. We proceeded by the side of a transparent stream, through a cool side-valley enclosed by steep rocks, till we came to an opening between them, and reached an elevated terrace covered with vellosia, which afforded us a last view of the lonely monastery. From this place, the road became steeper as we descended, so that we did not think it prudent to remain on our mules. The taller trees and shrubs gradually ceased, and we had to make our way with much difficulty through low bushes. In the white quartz-slate, large spots of which were often bare, we observed narrow veins and fragments of a compact shining quartz, in which kyanite and rhaëticite occur, and here and there casual pieces of common shorl.

"On several parts of the mountain, we heard the noise of subterraneous waters, which penetrate between the crevices and clefts of the rock, and at last issue out below, in cool streams. From the top of the mountain, we saw the rocky summit of the Itacolumi in the south-east; and in

the east and north-east, several low mountain chains, through which the Rio Percicaba and the Rio de S. Barbara flow to join the Rio Doce. On the eastern side, the declivity of the Serra do Caraça is so steep, and the narrow path is covered with so many loose fragments of rock, that the descent into the valley is extremely dangerous. We at length happily reached Inficionado."

The same evening, the travellers reached Bento Rodriguez, and, on the following day, returned by the main road through Marianna to Villa Rica.

We must now leave the land of gold for the land of diamonds.

FROM VILLA RICA TO TEJUCO.

THE object of Mr. Mawe's journey, it will be recollected, was to explore the diamond mines of the Serro do Frio, which are a hundred miles further north. After a short stay at Villa Rica, he set out for Tejuco, attended by the two soldiers and his negro servant. The route lies through the city of Marianna. After passing the village of Bento Rodriguez, he arrived the first night at Inficionado, distant fifteen miles north of Marianna. Half a league further, the Corgo do Inficionado, a fine rivulet, flows through a country rich in gold, the peculiar colour of which has given rise to the name of the district, which is properly *Ouro Inficionado*, infected gold. Near the village of St. Barbara, (which Cazal gives as the name also of the stream,) gold-washings appear in all directions. At eight miles further, leading over a fine open country, is the once large and flourishing arraial of *Catas Altas* (deep mines), now falling into decay through the diminution of the gold. It contained at this time at least 2000 inhabitants, and the neighbourhood seemed populous. After passing the arraial of Cocaes, distant about six

miles from Catas Altas, Mr. Mawe halted for the night, at the mansion of the *capitam mor* of the district, having travelled this day thirty miles. The third day, he reached a hamlet called Vaz; the fourth day, the village of Itambé, situated near a fine river of the same name. "This place," says Mr. Mawe, "was formerly of some consequence; but, as the gold in its vicinity failed, it sank into poverty and wretchedness. It contains about 1,000 inhabitants, who, degraded to the lowest stage of inactive apathy, looked as if they were the ghosts of their progenitors haunting the ruins of their departed wealth! Every thing about them bore a cheerless aspect: the houses were ready to fall to the ground through want of repair, the door-places were overgrown with grass, and the patches of garden-ground that here and there appeared, were covered with weeds. The face of the country, too, was entirely different from that which I had passed, being universally dry, sterile, and stony. The commandant of the place answered our remarks on the visible signs of starvation in the looks of the villagers, by coolly saying, 'While they get Indian corn to eat, and water to drink, they will not die of hunger.' I was glad to depart from this home of famine as fast as possible, heartily joining in the exclamation which the Portuguese have bestowed upon it: *Das mizerias de Itambé libera nos, Domine*—(From the miseries of Itambé the Lord deliver us)."

The following day, Mr. Mawe came, at the end of five miles, to the Rio das Onzas (ounce river). A rugged and mountainous tract succeeded, on descending from which, he forded a rather deep stream, called the Rio Negro, and riding for some distance along its margin, arrived at the deserted village of Gaspar Soares, the site of some exhausted gold-washings.* He lodged at a house some way

* The serra of Gaspar Soares is stated by Mr. Henderson to

beyond, seated about half way up a picturesque mountain consisting almost entirely of micaceous iron ore. The route, on the following day, lay for some leagues over hills abounding with the same metal, to a place called Lagos or Ouro Branco (white gold), from the platina found here in a gold-washing, in the bed of the stream. It was accompanied with gold and black oxyde of iron, and the miners imagined it to be gold united with some other metal from which it could not be separated: accordingly, as the quantity of real gold was small, and the white gold, as they called it, was not known to be of value, the works were gradually neglected, and at length abandoned. The rivulet Lagos empties itself into the Rio St. Antonio, along which the road lies for some distance to the "large and tolerably handsome village" of Conceição, which seemed to Mr. Mawe large enough to contain 2,000 inhabitants, but, like most others in this exhausted district, it is fast hastening to decay. The vestiges of old gold-washings are seen in every direction, and the surface exhibits iron ore in abundance; yet, iron is here so dear, and the people in general so poor, that the mules have seldom a shoe to their feet.

The traveller has now entered on the comarca of Serro do Frio, which is divided from that of Villa Rica by the Rio Doce; and the streams now find their way by a south-easterly course into that river. The St. Antonio, which comes from the north-west, traverses an extensive territory abounding in cattle. A journey of thirty miles from Conceição, through a rugged country, brought Mr. Mawe to a village called Corgos, near Tapinhoá-canga, the population of which is stated to have dwindled down from nearly 3,000 to a third of that number. The following

abound in iron mines, "for the working of which," he adds, "a royal establishment is forming."

day, he crossed the ridge of a lofty chain of mountains abounding with streams, one of the largest of which, the Rio dos Peixes, (a branch of the St. Antonio,) he forded thrice, and then entered on an elevated and fertile plain, intersected with rivulets in every direction. In the evening, he reached Villa do Principe, the capital of the comarca.

This town, which, like the other provincial capitals of Minas, has its smelting-house with the usual appointments, its ouvidor, who holds also the office of mint-master, and a *juiz de fora*, contains a church and five chapels, but, according to Mr. Henderson, "only one good street." The inhabitants are supposed by Mr. Mawe to amount to 5,000, "a considerable proportion of whom are shop-keepers; the rest, artisans, farmers, and miners. Indian corn, legumes, cotton, and sugar are cultivated in the neighbourhood." The town is stated by Cazal to be two miles from the Rio dos Peixes, nearly 100 north-east of Sabara, 110 miles north-north-east of Marianna,* and 370 miles almost north-west of Rio. As this town is situated close upon the confines of the diamond district, and on the high road leading to it, the strictest regulations are observed with regard to the passage of all persons arriving here. "No one," we are informed, "except travellers on business with certain certificates to that effect, is suffered to proceed, until a formal notification has been made to the governor of that district; the laws of which are so strict, that any person found within it, out of the regular road, is liable to be apprehended on suspicion, and subjected to an examination, which frequently occasions much trouble and delay."

The country around Villa do Principe is very fine and

* Yet, the journey from Villa Rica occupied Mr. Mawe seven days.

open, being free from those impenetrable forests which occur so frequently in other parts of the province. The soil is productive, and the climate mild and salubrious. A few leagues beyond, however, the aspect of the country undergoes a striking change, and its surface, consisting of coarse sand and rounded quartz pebbles, is devoid of either wood or herbage. Towards the close of the day, Mr. Mawe reached the diamond-works of St. Gonzales, the first which occur in this direction. The next day, proceeding through the same mountainous and sterile country, he crossed two rapid rivulets, one of them called Rio Negro, and passing the register called Milho Verde, near the river of that name, reached, a few miles beyond, the place of his destination; a month having elapsed since his departure from Rio on this arduous journey.

"Tejuco," says Mr. Mawe, "being situated in a sterile district, which produces nothing for the maintenance of its inhabitants, in number about 6,000, depends, for a supply of provisions, on farms situated several leagues distant. The bread of the country was at this time extremely dear; Indian corn, from which it is made, being from 5*s.* 6*d.* to 6*s.* the bushel; beans and other pulse in proportion. Beef was very indifferent, this being the dry season; pork and poultry were rather plentiful. At no place do I recollect to have seen a greater proportion of indigent people, particularly of females. Full a hundred and fifty of these unhappy persons come weekly to receive portions of flour which the governor was pleased to allow them. They are totally without occupation, here being neither agriculture nor manufactures to afford them any; yet, both these main supports of the population might be introduced, if a proper spirit of industry prevailed among the inhabitants. The land would, with little trouble, yield excellent crops, were any kind of enclosures made; which, it must be allowed, is an undertaking attended with some difficulties,

yet not of such magnitude as to render it hopeless. With respect to manufactures, a most valuable material is at hand, as cotton from Minas Novas, distant only from sixty to one hundred miles, passes through this place to the capital.

"Yet, notwishstanding the idleness of the inhabitants, Tejuco may be called flourishing, on account of the circulation of property created by the diamond-works. The annual sum paid by Government for the hire of negroes, salaries of officers, and various necessaries, such as nitre and iron, does not amount to less than 35,000*l.*; and this, added to the demands of the inhabitants of the town and its vicinity, occasions a considerable trade. The shops are stocked with English cottons, baizes, and cloths, and other manufactured goods;* also, hams, cheese, butter, porter, and other articles of consumption. Mules from Bahia and Rio de Janeiro come loaded with them.

"Tejuco, owing to its situation by the side of a hill, is very irregularly built; its streets are uneven, but the houses in general are well constructed and in good condition, compared with those of other towns in the interior. Its name, which, in the Portuguese language, signifies a

* In the evening parties, the company are stated to have been "all dressed after the English mode, and in dresses of English manufacture,—cotton prints, straw hats, artificial flowers, jewellery," &c. In these parties, "the gentlemen engage at whist, and the ladies take tea, and play round games." "They frequently form tea-parties." "Dancing is a favourite amusement, and all appear much pleased and animated with the English country-dance." "In no part of Brazil did I meet," adds Mr. Mawe, "with society so select and agreeable." The ladies in general, moreover, have a taste for music, and touch the guitar with great spirit and elegance. Tea-parties and card-parties imply, in many cases, a very small portion of intellectual culture; but such doings at Tejuco are of some importance, since the adoption of European, especially English manners, is a point gained towards civilisation at all events.

muddy place, is derived from places of that description in its neighbourhood, which are rendered passable by being covered with large pieces of wood."

The town contains, according to Cazal, a church of St. Antonio, with a religious brotherhood attached to it; a chapel of Bom Fim, with a fraternity of "black creoles;" another fraternity of mulattoes, and a fourth of African blacks, each having its chapel; also, two Terceira orders, and a recolhimento of virgins; there is likewise a chapel attached to the misericordia. Here reside the tribunal or diamond-junta, composed of a *desembargador intendente* (supreme judge), who is the president, with an exclusive jurisdiction in the diamond district; a *corregidor fiscal*, or treasurer; two cashiers; and an inspector-general. There are upwards of 6,000 negroes to work for diamonds, and 200 inspectors, who are whites, subordinate to the junta.*

"What is termed the diamond-ground," says Mr. Mawe, "extends about sixteen leagues from north to south, and about eight from east to west. It was first explored by some enterprising miners from Villa do Principe, a few years after the establishment of that town. These men proceeding northerly, found an open country, watered by many small rivulets, which they tried for gold by washing: some of them engaged their attention for a short time, but not proving sufficiently rich, they continued their route, passing the places now called San Gonzalo and Milho Verde, until they arrived at a few streams that flow from the base of the mountain on which Tejuco is built. These rivulets were then washed for gold, and

* Henderson's Brazil, pp. 286, 287. It is a somewhat singular omission, that Mr. Mawe makes no mention of the public buildings, or of the religious orders; although, according to the above statement, their number is likely to strike a traveller, from the circumstance of their being prohibited residing in other parts of the mining-district.

were considered as belonging to the district of Villa do Principe. No idea was at first entertained, that the rivulets contained diamonds, although it is said that some were collected and presented to the then governor of Villa do Principe as curious bright stones, and were used by him as counters at cards. Soon afterwards, a few of them found their way to Lisbon, and were given as pretty pebbles to the Dutch minister, to send to Holland, which was then the principal mart in Europe for precious stones. The lapidaries, to whom they were presented for examination, pronounced these pebbles to be very fine diamonds. Information was accordingly sent to the Dutch consul at Lisbon, who did not fail to profit by the occasion; for he managed the affair with Government so well, that he contracted for the precious stones, at the same time that he communicated the intelligence. Government afterwards endeavoured to monopolise the diamonds, and made a distinct district of Serro do Frio, placing it under peculiar laws and regulations.

"The number of diamonds sent over during the first twenty years after the discovery, is said to be almost incredible, and to exceed one thousand ounces in weight. This supply could not fail to diminish the general value of diamonds, as none had ever before been known to come from any other part of the globe, except India, whither the Brazilian diamonds were afterwards sent, and found a better market there than in Europe.

"By stratagems and intrigues, Government was prevailed on to let these invaluable territories to a company, who were under stipulations to work with a limited number of negroes, or to pay a certain sum per day for every negro employed. This opened a door to every species of fraud: double the stipulated number of negroes was admitted; and this imposition was connived at by the agents of Government, who received pay in one hand and bribes

in the other. Presents were made to men possessing influence at court, by the contractors, who soon became rich; and they continued (subject to a few regulations) in possession of the diamond mines until about the year 1772, when, Government determining to take them into their own hands, these contracts were ended.

"This was the time for reforming abuses, and for placing this rich district under the best regulations; but it was neglected; prejudice prevailed over prudence; and the management was entrusted to men who did not understand the real interests of the concern, or, what is more probable, who were so shackled in their authority, that they could not pursue them. From this time, affairs became worse, and the establishment was in debt to foreigners, who had advanced a considerable sum of money on the security of having all the diamonds which the mines produced. There were other incumbrances, which can be removed only by a total change of system. In its present state, the establishment appears to produce much greater wealth than it actually does. During a period of five years, from 1801 to 1806 inclusive, the expenses were 204,000*l.*; and the diamonds sent to the treasury at Rio de Janeiro, weighed 115,675 carats. The value of gold found in the same period, amounted to 17,300*l.* sterling, from which it appears, that the diamonds actually cost Government thirty-three shillings and ninepence per carat. These years were esteemed singularly productive: the mines do not in general yield to Government more than 20,000 carats annually. Exclusive of this amount, however, there is a vast quantity smuggled."*

As the greatest horror is expressed, in all polite companies in Tejuco, at the very mention of the word *grimpeiro* or smuggler, Mr. Mawe expected at first, that he

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 349–52.

should not see a diamond there except in the treasury. "But a little acquaintance with the town," he says, "soon convinced me that I was a novice; for, on visiting a few friends to whom I had introductions, I found that diamonds were bartered for every thing, and were actually much more current than specie. Even *pious indulgencies* were bought with them; and surely, no one could have suspected, that the seller of his holiness's bulls would condescend to taste the forbidden fruits of Tejuco.

"The hiring of negroes to the diamond-works, is the favourite occupation of all ranks in Tejuco: rich and poor endeavour to engage in it to as great an extent as their property will allow. The pay of the slaves is trifling compared with the risk, their labour being heavy, their maintenance poor, and their treatment harsh; there must, therefore, be some temptation not openly seen, yet as well known as light from darkness. Numbers of persons are thus induced to reside in Tejuco under various pretexts, but with no other real view than to get their negroes into the service, and to live idly on their wages, and on what they conceal or pick up. Thus, all fatten upon the pasture, except those in the extreme of indigence, and others who, from the neglect of economy, are always poor. There is a numerous class, from the age of seven years to upwards of twenty, who are without any visible means of earning their subsistence, and would remain idle even if manufactories were established; for, though they are brought up from their infancy with negro children, yet, in the working department, they would abandon their former play-fellows. The people in general are rendered more averse from habits of regular industry, by the continual hopes which they indulge of becoming opulent by some fortunate discovery of mines: these fallacious ideas, which they instil into the minds of their children, strongly prejudice them against labour, though they all exist

miserably, and not unfrequently depend upon donations. Their education is extremely limited: they are in general total strangers to the sciences, and are very scantily informed on any useful subject."

The district has a direct communication with Bahia, and a few troops of mules are continually employed in going from one place to the other. But the journey is much longer, and although the country is less mountainous, the difficulties of travelling are greater; there are fewer ranchos on the road; and it is requisite, Mr. Mawe says, in one part, to carry fresh water for two days' consumption.

The governor of the diamond district at that time, was a Dr. Camara, a pupil of Werner, and a man, apparently, of considerable intelligence. He received Mr. Mawe with great cordiality, informing him that, in expectation of his arrival, he had delayed a journey to the largest of the diamond-works, called Mandanga, seated on the Jequitinhonha, distant about thirty miles. After crossing the ravine, watered by the small rivulet of St. Francisco, which separates Tejuco from the opposite mountain, the road thither is very rugged, continually ascending or descending mountains of considerable extent; and the country continues bare of trees, presenting occasionally only a few poor shrubs, as far as the Jequitinhonha, where it is crossed by a good wooden bridge, and forms a stream "larger than the Derwent at Derby." This river, so celebrated for the prodigious quantity of diamonds which has been drawn from its bed, rises in the Serro do Frio. After describing many windings, it receives the Itucambirussu and the Vaccaria from the serra of Gram Mogol, and then bends towards the east, to meet the Arassuahy, which also originates in the Serro do Frio. A few leagues below this confluence, the Piauhy enters the river from the south-west; and their united waters, after gathering

some other tributaries, flow towards the north-east, forming a boundary between the provinces of Porto Seguro and Bahia, and disembogue into the ocean, under the name of the Rio Grande de Belmonte.

DIAMOND MINES.

At Mandanga, the river is, in general, from three to nine feet deep, and about as wide as the Thames at Windsor. The part which was then being "worked," was a curve or elbow, from which the current had been diverted by means of a canal. The deeper parts of the channel were laid dry by means of chain-pumps worked by a water-wheel, and the *cascalho* was then removed by means of machinery;—a saving of labour rarely thought of in a land where that labour is performed by negroes, and which had only recently been introduced by Dr. Camara. The stratum of *cascalho* consists of similar materials to that found in the gold district. In many parts, on the margin of the river, are "large conglomerate masses of round pebbles cemented by oxyde of iron, which sometimes envelope gold and diamonds." During the dry season, sufficient *cascalho* is dug up to occupy all the hands employed during the rainy months. The method of washing the *cascalho* is thus described:—

"A shed is erected in the form of a parallelogram, twenty-five or thirty yards long, and about fifteen wide, consisting of upright posts which support a roof thatched with long grass. Down the middle of the area of this shed, a current of water is conveyed through a canal covered with strong planks, on which the *cascalho* is laid two or three feet thick. On the other side of the area is a flooring of planks, from four to five yards long, embedded in clay, extending the whole length of the shed, and having a slope from the canal, of three or four inches to a

yard. This flooring is divided into about twenty compartments or troughs, each about three feet wide, by means of planks placed on their edge. The upper ends of all these troughs (here called canoes) communicate with the canal, and are so formed, that water is admitted into them between two planks that are about an inch separate. Through this opening, the current falls about six inches into the trough, and may be directed to any part of it, or stopped at pleasure by means of a small quantity of clay. Along the lower ends of the trough, a small channel is dug, to carry off the water. On the heap of *cascalho*, at equal distances, are placed three high chairs for the officers or overseers. After they are seated, the negroes enter the troughs, each provided with a rake with a short handle, with which he rakes into the trough about fifty or eighty pounds weight of cascalho. The water being then let in upon it, the cascalho is spread abroad, and continually raked up to the head of the trough, so as to be kept in constant motion. This operation is performed for the space of a quarter of an hour; till the water begins to run clearer, having washed the earthy particles away. The gravel-like matter is raked up to the end of the trough; the larger stones are thrown out, and afterwards those of inferior size; then, the whole is examined with great care for diamonds. When a negro finds one, he immediately stands upright, and claps his hands, then extends them, holding the gem between his fore-finger and thumb. An overseer receives it from him, and deposits it in a bowl suspended from the centre of the structure, half full of water. In this vessel all the diamonds found in the course of the day are placed, and at the close of the work, are taken out and delivered to the principal officer, who, after they have been weighed, registers the particulars.

"When a negro is so fortunate as to find a diamond

of the weight of an *octava* (17½ carats), much ceremony takes place; he is crowned with a wreath of flowers, and carried in procession to the administrator, who gives him his freedom, by paying his owner for it.* He also receives a present of new clothes, and is permitted to work on his own account. When a stone of eight or ten carats is found, the negro receives two new shirts, a complete new suit, a hat, and a handsome knife. For smaller stones of trivial amount, proportionate premiums are given.

"Many precautions are taken to prevent the negroes from embezzling diamonds. Although they work in a bent position, and consequently never know whether the overseers are watching them or not, yet, it is easy for them to omit gathering any which they see, and to place them in a corner of the trough, for the purpose of secreting them at leisure hours; to prevent which, they are frequently changed while the operation is going on. A word of command being given by the overseers, they instantly move into each other's troughs, so that no opportunity of collusion can take place. If a negro be suspected of having swallowed a diamond, he is confined in a strong room until the fact can be ascertained. Formerly, the punishment inflicted on a negro for smuggling diamonds, was confiscation of his person to the State; but it being thought too hard, that the owner should suffer for the offence of his servant, the penalty has been commuted for personal imprisonment and chastisement. This is a much lighter punishment than that which their owners or any white man would suffer for a similar offence.

* During Mr. Mawe's stay at Tejuco, a stone of sixteen carats and a half was found. "It was pleasing," he says, "to see the anxious desire manifested by the officers, that it might prove heavy enough to entitle the poor negro to his freedom; and when, on being weighed, it proved only a carat short of the requisite weight, all seemed to sympathise in his disappointment."

"The negroes are formed into working parties, called troops, containing two hundred each, under the direction of an administrator and inferior officers. Each troop has a clergyman and a surgeon to attend it. With respect to the subsistence of the negroes, although the present governor has in some degree improved it by allowing a daily portion of fresh beef, yet, it is still poor and scanty; and in other respects, they are more hardly dealt with than those of any other establishment which I visited: notwithstanding this, the owners are all anxious to get their negroes into the service, doubtless from sinister motives. The officers are liberally paid, and live in a style of considerable elegance, which a stranger would not be led to expect in so remote a place. Our tables were daily covered with a profusion of excellent viands, served up on fine Wedgewood ware; and the state of their household generally corresponded to this essential part of it.

"The substances that accompany diamonds, and are considered as good indications of them, are bright bean-like, iron ore, a slaty, flint-like substance of iron texture, black oxyde of iron in great quantities, rounded bits of blue quartz, yellow crystal, and other materials entirely different from any thing known to be produced in the adjacent mountains. Diamonds are by no means peculiar to the beds of rivers or deep ravines; they have been found in cavities and water-courses even on the summits of the loftiest mountains. The diamonds vary exceedingly in size. Some are so small that four or five are required to weigh one grain; consequently, sixteen or twenty to the carat. There are seldom found more than two or three stones of from seventeen to twenty carats in the course of a year; and not once in two years, is there found throughout the whole washings, a stone of thirty carats." *

* Mawe's Travels, pp. 316—22.

After spending several days at Mandanga, Mr. Mawe was conducted to the diamond-works of Monteiro, two miles up the river, and, at the distance of a league further, to the gold-mines of Carrapatos. Here he was shewn a heap of *cascalho* estimated to be worth 10,000*l.* In removing this heap from the bed of the river, 400 negroes had been employed three months; and to wash it, would occupy 100 men for three months more; the expense of both operations amounting to about 1500*l.* While Mr. Mawe was here, six negroes, in the course of four hours, obtained from about a ton of *cascalho*, nearly twenty ounces troy-weight of gold. This was esteemed a very rich place, and such circumstances are of rare occurrence.

A few days after his return to Tejuco, another excursion was proposed, to the diamond-works on the Rio Pardo, distant about twenty miles in a north-west direction. This river, which has here the appearance of a paltry, dirty rivulet, has produced as large a quantity of the most precious gems as any river in the district.* The rough bluish-green diamonds formerly so much esteemed by the Dutch, continue to be found here, and the stones of this rivulet are still reputed the most valuable in Brazil. "The accompanying substances are somewhat different from those of the washings at Mandanga; here is no bean-like ore, but a considerable quantity of flinty-slate, like Lydian stone, in various shapes and sizes, and very small black oxyde of

* Mr. Mawe states, that this Rio Pardo runs into the Rio Velho or Das Velhas, a tributary of the great river St. Francisco. There appear to be no fewer than three rivers of this name, which signifies 'grey river.' Besides that which is received by the Das Velhas, Cazal mentions one which falls into the St. Francisco itself; while a third of the same name, and the largest of the three, rising in the Serra Almas, runs south-east, gathering the Preto, which has its source in the Serra Branca; and then, inclining to the east, enters the comarca of Ilhcos, where it is discharged into the ocean under the name of Patype.—*Henderson*, p. 282.

iron. The earthy matter is also much finer." Mr. Mawe was informed, that there remained as much unworked ground as would occupy a hundred negroes full twenty years.

Thirty-five leagues from Tejuco in a north-east direction, is Tocaya, the principal place, Mr. Mawe was informed, in Minas Novas. The road thither runs nearly parallel with the Jequitinhonha, which, a few leagues to the westward of the village, is joined by the Arassuahy, and bends towards the east. In the numerous rivulets which fall into it in this direction, are found white topazes, commonly known here by the name of *minas novas*, blue topazes, aqua-marinas, and chrysoberyls: the latter are much esteemed by the higher orders in Brazil, and, when polished, are of great brilliancy and exquisite beauty.

Six miles southward of the Arassuahy, and twenty-five miles north-north-east of Villa do Principe, is the town of Fanado or Bom Successo, created a town in 1751, with the usual appendages of a juiz de fora, a Latin professor, and some half-dozen religious orders. The neighbourhood yields diamonds of an inferior quality, but the advantageous position of the place for trade, is likely to render it of some importance, when the roads to the ports of Porto Seguro are cleared and become frequented. It is within the archbishopric of Bahia.

The other principal arraials in this comarca, are, St. Cruz da Chapada, ten miles to the north of Bom Successo, near the river Capibary; Agua-suja (dirty water), near the confluence of a stream of that name with the Arassuahy, fifteen miles north-east of Chapada, and twenty-five from Bom Successo; Rio Pardo, near the confluence of that river with the Preto, 100 miles north of Bom Successo; Barra do Rio das Velhas, situated in a marshy plain near the confluence of that river with the St. Francisco,—a place of considerable commerce, and likely, but

for its unhealthy position, to become one of the largest places in the province; it is 130 miles west-north-west of Bom Successo, and 150 north-north-west of Villa do Principe; Porteira, two miles distant, in a more healthy situation; and, 25 miles further north, on the margin of the St. Francisco, "the agreeably situated arraial of Estrema."*

The whole of the district called Minas Novas, is under the jurisdiction of the ouvidor of Villa do Principe, who goes his northern circuit once a year. The population is very thinly scattered, but, Mr. Mawe says, is daily increasing. Commerce, rather than mining, appears to be the attraction to these remote regions. The great river St. Francisco separates this northern part of the comarca of Serro do Frio from

THE COMARCA OF PARACATU.

This almost unknown district was included, prior to 1815, in the comarca of Sabara. A new ouvidor was then appointed for the township and circuit of Paracatu, the *julgados* (villages) of Desemboque and Araxa being subsequently detached from the comarca of Villa Boa in Goyaz, and annexed to the new ouvidoria.

Paracatu do Principe, the only town, owes its origin to its mines, first discovered in 1744. At that period, there was no other colony to the west of the St. Francisco, except the arraial of St. Romão. A great number of adventurers were attracted by the quantity of gold, and the Indians were expelled from the whole district. The town, however, has decayed very much from its former flourishing condition. The gold is of a good colour, but of impure quality, and difficult of extraction from the want of

* See Henderson's Brazil, pp. 283—85.

water. Diamonds having subsequently been discovered in various parts, the working of the gold-washings is now restricted to a few leagues round the town. The population in 1808, was estimated at above 1,000 souls, and was then on the increase. It has the advantage of a high and healthy situation, being situated on an elevated plain. The houses are of taipe; the streets are paved; and besides the church, there are four "hermitages." The town is 140 miles from the St. Francisco, and about half a mile from the Corrego Rico (rich channel), which falls into the Paracatu. In the neighbourhood, the vine, the orange, and the pine-apple flourish luxuriantly, and there is an abundance of deer and game. The district comprises all the territory lying westward of the St. Francisco, from the Carinhenha to the Abaité.

The latter river is distinguished by having produced the largest diamond ever found in America, weighing nearly an ounce, which was accidentally discovered by three outlaws in searching for gold.* It has since been worked at different periods with various success; but, though large diamonds have been found, they have generally been of indifferent quality, and the Government had lately abandoned the works. A few miles from this river, the small river Chumbo (lead river), which falls into the Abaité, passes the base of a *morro* containing a very rich vein of lead ore in calcareous spar. Mr. Mawe was shewn pieces of it weighing twenty pounds: some of the specimens were covered with carbonate of lead. No one had at that time undertaken to work it, because the difficulty and expense of conveying the metal to Rio, would exceed the price it would fetch; but hereafter, this mine will be a source of wealth. Cazal states, that the Abaité is formed by two streams of the same name, one coming

* See vol. i. p. 193, note.

from the south-west, the other from the north-west, their sources being nearly a hundred miles apart. The intervening territory is a forest tract called Matta da Corda, enclosing several campinhas or extensive grazing-lands. The Abaité do Norte is also called the Rio Fulda; the Abaité do Sul, the Rio Verra.

The principal heads of the Paracatu are the Escuro and the Prata. The latter is mentioned by Mr. Mawe as having yielded fine diamonds; and a strong guard is stationed near its banks, to prevent smuggling. Twenty miles north of the confluence of the Paracatu, the St. Francisco receives, also on the left bank, the large Urucuya. At almost an equal distance between the mouths of these two rivers, is the considerable arraial of St. Romão, which carries on a considerable inland trade, especially in salt, obtained from Pilão Arcado and its vicinity. Above the mouth of the Urucuya, the St. Francisco receives, on its western margin, the Acary, the Pardo, the Pandeiro, the Salgado, the Pindahyba, the Itacaramby, and the Japore; a few leagues below the latter, on its eastern side, the important river Verde; and about the same distance further, the Carinhenha. On most of these rivers there is a parish or an arraial; but immense territories are wholly unappropriated. On the banks of the St. Francisco, and to the eastward, great numbers of cattle are bred, and large herds are sent to Rio, a distance of above 600 miles. The want of salt in these parts is a serious evil, as it is requisite for the cattle; nor will they, it is said, breed well without it. The district of Paracatu makes part of the bishopric of Pernambuco.

THE COMARCA OF SABARA,

Which formerly included all the western part of Minas Geraes north of the comarca of Rio das Mortes, being

bounded on the north by Pernambuco, and on the west by Goyaz, takes its name from its head town, the Villa Real do Sabara. This town stands near the confluence of the small river of the same name with the Das Velhas or Guaycuhy (old women river), in a low situation, surrounded with mountains. The heat, in the summer months, is greater here than in any other town in the province. It contains a church, two chapels,* a numerous fraternity of blacks, two Terceira orders, a royal smelting-house with the usual appointments, and has its juiz de fora and other municipal officers. The number of inhabitants in 1788, amounted to 7,656 persons ; the houses to 850. In 1819, the population did not exceed 9,347. The town is thirty-five miles north-north-west of Marianna, seventy-five miles north-north-east of St. João d'el Rey, and nearly 100 south-west of Villa do Principe.

" This comarca," says Mr. Henderson, " *which is nearly as large as England*, does not, exclusive of the district of Paracatu, contain more than 113,364 souls. Senhor Gama, who was recently its ouvidor, collected materials, during his triennial government, for a map of the comarca, which he presented to the minister of state at Rio de Janeiro, in expectation that his labours would at least have received some approbation; but the subject was treated with indifference." The fact appears to be, that the Government is not anxious that this *country of reserve* should be better known. Many places are known to be rich in diamonds, which, " by a strange policy," we are told, " are preserved untouched as a resource for the State; and whenever they are worked, if the proceedings are conducted upon the same principle as the dia-

* One of these is dedicated to *Nossa Senhora do O* (Our Lady of the round O), " the most whimsical of all her thousand and one appellations."

mond grounds of Tejuco, they will certainly not be a source of much revenue."

About twelve miles from Sabara, there is said to be a tepid lake, two miles long by nearly one in width: it discharges itself by an outlet into the Rio das Velhas, from which it is five miles distant. "In its centre," we are informed, "there are various springs, and when not agitated, its surface is covered with a pellicle or thin skin of the colour of mercury, which disappears by blowing upon it, and leaves the lips of those who drink it silvered over." Having been found of medicinal virtue in many diseases, it has acquired the name of the Holy Lake.*

Fifteen miles north of Sabara, and one mile from the Das Velhas, is the flourishing parish of St. Luzia, the population of which is said to amount to upwards of 13,000 souls, and it is "ornamented with five Roman Catholic temples." The only towns in the comarca, besides Sabara, are Villa Nova da Raynha, better known by its Indian name of Caethe, containing about 5000 inhabitants,—it is twelve miles east-south-east of Sabara, and has in its suburbs good potteries; and Pitangui, distant 100 miles north of St. João d'el Rey, and nearly 80 west-north-west of Sabara, situated on the right margin of the Para, (a tributary of the St. Francisco,) three miles below the confluence of the St. João. Its inhabitants, amounting to nearly 20,000 persons, breed horses, cattle, hogs, and sheep, and cultivate cotton and the sugar-cane.

* Henderson's Brazil, p. 278. To this work, compiled chiefly from Cazal, we are indebted for most of the details relating to this comarca, which has hitherto, we believe, been unexplored by European travellers. We regret that the sequel to Dr. Von Spix's personal narrative, which might possibly furnish additional information, has not yet reached England. This lake will deserve the attention of future travellers.

We already seem, here, on the extreme verge of civilised society; and yet, we have not advanced half-way into the interior of this immense empire. Two vast provinces, stretching over more than twelve degrees of longitude, lie between the western confines of Minas Geraes and the Spanish American provinces bordering on the Paraguay. The first of these,

THE PROVINCE OF GOYAZ,

Which derives its name from the Goya Indians, its aboriginal inhabitants, occupies the centre of Brazil, and is one of the largest provinces, being about 700 miles in length, and nearly 500 in width. It lies between latitude 6° and 18° south, and is bounded, on the north, by the provinces of Para and Maranham; on the east, by Pernambuco and Minas Geraes; on the south, by St. Paulo; and on the west, by Matto Grosso. With the exception of the province of Solimoens, it is the most thinly peopled part of Brazil, having been the last explored and settled. In the year 1737, it was first created a comarca of the province of St. Paulo: it was made a separate province in 1749. The jurisdiction of the ouvidor extended over its whole territory till 1809, when it was divided into the two comarcas of Villa Boa and St. Joâo das Duas Barras. A census of the population was taken in 1804, Mr. Southey says, "with much apparent accuracy," when it amounted to little more than 40,000 souls.

Almost all the *povoaçoes* or inhabited places of the province, owe their foundation to the enterprising spirit of the gold-hunters. The individual who first discovered the mineral riches of this province, was a Paulista named Manoel Correa, who, sometime about the middle of the seventeenth century, found some gold in the river Aracis, whither he had penetrated at the head of a party of slave-

hunters, and brought home about ten *octavas* of the precious metal, which he gave "as a diadem to crown the sacred image of our Lady of Penha in the town of Sorocaba." After him, Bartholomew Bueno, the most renowned adventurer of his age, explored the same country about the year 1670, taking with him his son, then only twelve years of age. He dwelt for some time in the vicinity of the site of the present capital, and observed that the Goya women ornamented themselves with gold, but no advantage was taken of the discovery at the time. "More than fifty years," says Mr. Southey, "elapsed, before Bueno the son, then more than threescore years of age, proposed to the governor of St. Paulo to go in search of the place which he had reached in his boyhood, and still vividly remembered. The recent discoveries in Cuyaba excited in him this desire, and made the proposal appear reasonable; and the governor, Rodrigo Cesar de Menezes, sent him upon this service with a hundred musqueteers, and a numerous body of attendants. After the lapse of so many years, it was hardly possible that he should be able to retrace his way through a wild country. He got too far to the south, and found gold. Some of his people, believing that they had totally lost all clew to the place of which they were in search, would fain have given up all further exploring, that they might profit by the fortune upon which they had fallen. Bueno, however, persisted in his purpose, and continued to wander, till, at the end of three years, having lost the greater part of his companions by disease, hardships, and accidents, he returned to St. Paulo. But this ill success had neither broken his spirit, nor extinguished his hopes: his character stood high for probity, as well as enterprise and sagacity, and the governor sent him out a second time. After some months, he came to a place where it appeared certain that some Portuguese must have been in old times.

There he took up his quarters, and having caught two Indians, they were immediately known to be Goyas. The first inquiry was, if they knew where the white men had formerly been encamped: they led him to a place not far distant, and Bueno recognised the spot which he had seen when a boy. He collected gold from five different streams, and returned with such rich and abundant samples, that he was presently sent back to establish a colony there, with the rank of capitam mor."

This was in the year 1726. On arriving at the new arraial, his first care was, to adopt the best method of maintaining amicable terms with the Indians, who, distrustful of their new visiters, appeared in arms. Bueno is said to have adopted a singular expedient for bringing them to an accommodation: he seized some of their women, on which, to prevent their being led into captivity, the Goyas sued for peace, and agreed to conduct the settlers to the places where the gold had been found. For some time, things went on harmoniously and prosperously, and so successful were the colonists, that they "envied not the miners of Cuyaba." But their good fortune soon becoming known, and the dangers of the journey to Cuyaba being formidable even to Paulistas, so great a number of miners were attracted to Goyaz in the course of two years, that the necessaries which daily arrived with the numerous caravans from St. Paulo, (to which city alone there was any track,) became insufficient for their subsistence. "Every thing sold at an exorbitant price. Of gold there was enough, but it could not supply sustenance. An *alquiere* of India corn cost six or seven *octavas* of gold; and the same measure of mandioc flour, ten *octavas*. A milch cow, which appeared there, was bought for two pounds weight of the same metal, and a hog for twenty-eight. Two *octavas* of gold were demanded for a pound of sugar; and every article of subsistence was procured only by pay-

ment in the same proportion. The dealers who conveyed the necessaries of life by a tedious journey, were enriched; but the mines were still more lucrative at this period. Many were at length induced to devote a portion of their time to the cultivation of the necessaries of life, that the gold which they collected, might not be consumed in payment for them."*

The capital of the province, and the only considerable town, is Villa Boa, originally the arraial of St. Anna, created a *villa* in 1739, and made the provincial capital in 1818. It is the residence of the governor, of a prelate who is bishop *in partibus*, of an ouvidor and a *juiz de fora*, who unite in themselves other appointments, and has its smelting-house and exchequer. The town occupies a flat situation on the banks of the Rio Vermelho (vermillion river), which divides it into two unequal parts. It is here an inconsiderable stream, but soon after passing the town, receives several small rivers from the Serra Doirada, and becomes navigable to its confluence with the great Araguaya, the western boundary of the province. "The edifices of the town," Cazal states, "are neither large, elegant, nor substantial." Besides the mother church of St. Anna, there are five chapels of our *polyonymous* Lady of Boa Morte, Carmo, &c. and another of St. Francisco. It has a fort, "with *two* pieces of artillery to fire salutations," "a fountain," and a public walk. The heat during the dry season is intense; but there are refreshing night-breezes. The inhabitants are estimated at about 6,000. It stands in latitude 16° 20′ south.

The *povoaçao*, or settlement, next in size and importance, is the "large and flourishing commercial" town of Meia Ponte, ninety miles east of Villa Boa, situated near the Rio das Almas, on the high road from St. Paulo to

* Henderson, pp. 233, 234.

Cuyaba. It was founded in 1731, and is considered as the cradle and centre of the agriculture and industry of the province. Its inhabitants and those of the environs cultivate Indian corn, wheat, mandioc, tobacco, cotton, sugar, and a little coffee; they breed cattle and hogs; and manufacture calicoes and woollen cloth. It contains a church, four "hermitages" or chapels, and "an hospicio for the travelling brotherhood of Terra Santa." About eighteen miles to the east-north-east, is the cordillera called Montes Pyreneos, from whose sides flow torrents to the four cardinal points.

A hundred miles to the south-south-east of Meia Ponte, on the road to St. Paulo, is the small arraial of St. Cruz, in the neighbourhood of which is the *morro* of Clemente, which abounds with gold, but has not yet been worked, "because, according to the saying of the miners, a mountain of gold is worth nothing if it has not water." Its inhabitants are consequently agriculturists and graziers. This is stated by Cazal to be the most ancient arraial in the province.

An edict was issued in February 1814, for the foundation of a town near the embouchure of the Rio Palma, which falls into the Parana, to be called St. João da Palma, and to be the head town of the comarca of St. Joam das Duas Barras. "In order to give it an immediate commencement, and to accelerate its augmentation, all individuals were exempted from payment of the *dizimos* (tithes) for ten years, who should erect a house for their own habitation in this town, or within the circle marked for its limits."

Eventually, the two comarcas into which this province is now divided, will be broken up into smaller subdivisions. The district of the capital alone is five hundred miles long from north to south; and that of Conceiçao, an arraial near the mouth of the Rio Palma, extends east and west

from one boundary of the province to the other. Cazal has laid down a natural division of the province into six cantons. "A line drawn from the mouth of the Paranahiba by its bed, to the confluence of the river Annicuns, then by the river Boys to its origin, crossing to that of the river Pedras, and by it down to the River das Almas, which continues it to the Maranham and the Toccantines, divides the province into two unequal parts, each of which is subdivided into three grand districts: Cayaponia, Goyaz (proper), and Nova Beira in the western part; Toccantines, Parana, and Rio das Velhas, in the eastern."

Cayaponia, which occupies the south-western angle, derives its name from the Capayo nation; it is the least known of all the districts, not yet possessing a single Christianised establishment. The natives who retain possession of it, wander about almost in a state of nudity, and have from time to time made destructive sallies on the caravans of Cuyaba, invading even the northern part of St. Paulo, from which this district is separated by the Parana.

Goyaz proper, lying to the north of the above district, comprises the district of the capital, and the most populous part of the province. The Serra Estrondo and the Rio Tabocas divide it, on the north, from the district of Nova Beira (new coast), which, like Cayaponia, is almost entirely in the possession of various savage nations. It extends upwards of 400 miles in length, between the rivers Araguaya and Toccantines, to the angle of their confluence. Here there is a *prezidio*, or military post, to register the canoes who navigate by both rivers to the city of Para; and, in 1809, a decree was passed, ordering a town to be founded here, under the name of St. Joâo das Duas Barras, which was to be the head of the comarca. The situation was, however, found ineligible, and two places were afterwards chosen, one on each river, higher

up. None of the cantons would be more advantageously situated for commerce, were it not for the Indians. Of these, the Chavante tribe is the most numerous and most formidable. "After being established," we are told, "and many baptised, in the aldeia of Pedro Terceiro, built expressly for them, in consequence of the vassalage which they voluntarily offered, they deserted all at one time, and returned to their natural mode of life. They are at present the most formidable enemies of the Portuguese."*

The district of Toccantines, the most northern of the eastern division, and separated by the river of that name from Nova Beira, is also for the most part occupied by Indians of the Chavante, Xerente, and Tapocoa tribes. The country is mountainous, and abounds with vast sandy, sterile plains, woods being found only on the margins of the rivers. The district of Parana, traversed diagonally by the river of that name, is somewhat better peopled, and is watered in all directions by numerous rivers, most of which discharge into the Maranham, except the Palma and the Correntes, which are branches of the Parana. The district of Rio das Velhas, traversed by that river, occupies the south-eastern portion of the province, bordering on Minas Geraes, and St. Paulo. In this canton, are Meia Ponte and Santa Cruz; and it included Desemboque and Araxa, before they were detached from this province, and added to the comarca of Paracatu.

The aspect of the province is said to be "almost

* The cause of this sudden desertion is of course not stated. It is notorious, however, that the first *Certanistas* (commanders of *bandeiras* or parties of adventurers) committed the greatest barbarities in this province, bringing home, it is said, from some of their expeditions against the Indians, strings of human ears. The Goyas are said to be *exterminated*, although it is probable that some remnant may exist under another name.

universally uneven, although in few parts mountainous;" and the soil, Cazal states to be fertile "only where there are woods, with which it does not abound;" but the fact is, little is known respecting it. The mines were at one period very productive: the largest fifth on the gold was in 1753, when it amounted to 169,080 octavas. In 1807, it was only 11,893 octavas.* "Latterly," says Mr. Southey, "the gold was failing; though here, as in Minas Geraes, it was believed that the main treasures of the earth were still untouched, and that only what was scattered upon the surface, had been gathered. About the end of the last century, a discovery was made at a place which, because of the colour of the metal, was called *Ouro Podre*, rotten gold. The vein was rich, and the people were so eager to profit by it, that when the guarda mor endeavoured to interpose his authority, and regulate the extraction according to the laws, he was set at defiance. A party of contraband miners collected three arrobas in the course of one night. Some persons were arrested for these disturbances; but they were delivered by process of law. The people had long solicited, that the country about the Rio Claro and the Rio dos Piloens, which had been reserved because of its diamonds, should be laid open; for this forbidden district, which was forty leagues in extent, was supposed to abound with gold; and they repeatedly urged the suit, as the sure and only

* Near the arraial of Agoaquente 'warm water', situated near a large and deep lake of brackish, tepid, and fetid water, two miles from the confluence of the Rio das Almas with the Maranham, the gold was so abundant as to draw an assemblage of 12,000 persons to the neighbourhood. "Among other pieces of considerable size, one was found of forty-three pounds weight, which was transmitted to the court in the same form that nature presented it. This rarity was placed in the royal museum at Lisbon, and became the booty of the French army when in that city."—*Henderson*, p. 251.

means of restoring the prosperity of the province. Accordingly, in 1801, the petition was granted, on condition that the diamonds, if any were found, should be deposited in a coffer under three keys. But it was soon ascertained that the richest mines had been wrought by some secret adventurers: and hands and capital were wanting for any effectual search, after this disappointment."*

Diamonds, Mr. Mawe says, have been found in some parts of large size and of brilliant appearance, but, when cut, they have not in general proved of as pure a water as those procured in other places. "As this fine district is so distant from the coast," adds this traveller, "it has very little commerce in any of its productions, except gold, precious stones, and cattle, which are bred on the frontiers; also some cotton, and occasionally, a few other articles, which are sent to Rio de Janeiro. The mules on the return-journey, are also loaded with salt, iron, cheap cotton prints, woollens, (particularly baizes,) hats, fire-arms, powder and shot, and a variety of artificers' tools. When any of the inhabitants have any thing peculiarly precious to dispose of, they generally take it to Rio de Janeiro, and lay out the proceeds chiefly in the purchase of negroes, (they being at all times the first object,) iron, salt, and other commodities."

Among the objects which claim the attention of future travellers, the Montes Pyreneos invite the examination of the geologist, and the tepid waters of the lake Agoaquente, upon the margins of which there are said to be some frightful caverns, present a highly interesting phenomenon. The waters will probably be found sulphureous and medicinal. In Rio das Velhas, there is a plain lying between the two rivers which bear the name of Uberava,

* Southey's Brazil, vol. iii. p. 836.

said to be thirty-five miles in width, without the slightest elevation, and absolutely destitute of wood, but abounding with the deer and the emu. The small river Furnas, in the same canton, has a fine fall of twenty fathoms, a little before it discharges itself into the Rio das Velhas.

Of still wider extent, and equally untravelled and unknown, is the vast country which is called

THE PROVINCE OF MATTO GROSSO.

THIS province, which lies between the parallel of 7° south latitude, where it borders on that of Para, and 24° 30′ south, where it is bounded by Parana, occupies a territory of nearly 1,100 miles from north to south, by almost 800 at its greatest width, including an area of 48,000 square leagues, being more extensive than ancient Germany. The Araguaya and the Parana separate it, on the east, from the provinces of Goyaz and St. Paulo; and on the west, the Guapore, the Jauru, and the Paraguay, divide it from the Spanish territories. It comprises nearly four climates. "Nature herself," says Cazal, "has partitioned it into three grand districts, of which two are divided into six smaller ones, which will, perhaps, at some future day, form the limits of the same number of ouvidorias, when the increase of its population shall render such a measure desirable. These seven grand divisions are, Camapuania on the south; Matto Grosso proper, Cuyaba, and Bororonia in the centre; aud Juruenna, Arinos, and Tappiraquia on the north.

The larger portion of this country must be considered as *terra incognita*, being still, for the most part, in the possession of native tribes. Tippiraquia, so called from the Tippiraque Indians, lying between the rivers Araguaya and Xingu, is altogether unknown, except along

its eastern boundary. Arinos and Juruenna, named from the rivers which intersect them, are not better known.* These two rivers unite to form the great Tapajos. Bororonia, which takes the name of the Bororo Indians, and is watered by the St. Lourenço, lies between Goyaz and Cuyaba: with the exception of an arraial and register on the Cuyaba road, it contains no settlement.

Camapuania, the southern division of the province, takes its name from the river Camapuan: it is almost universally flat, and a vast portion of the western half is annually submerged by the inundations of the Paraguay, which is stated to cover, in some parts, more than seventy miles of plain. Its northern limits are a chain of mountains, extending in the thirteenth parallel of latitude, from east to west, from which emanate the Paraguay and its branches flowing to the southward, and the heads of the Tapajos and the Xingu flowing northward. Numerous other rivers have their origin in a cordillera of inconsiderable elevation, running from north to south, and dividing the canton into east and west, denominated the Serra Amambahy. The middle of the northern part of this district is known by the name of *Vaccaria*, or cattle-plains, "in consequence of the cattle that were dispersed here, when the Paulistas expelled the inhabitants of the city Xerez, and of five neighbouring small aldeias, which formed a small province, of which the said city was the head."

Of the various savage nations which retain possession of this country, the most powerful and distinguished are the Guaycurues, of whom we have the following account:

"At the present day, they are divided into three bodies; one of which, without any alliance with other nations,

* In the canton of Juruenna, in latitude 9° 45′, where the river Madera curves to the west, there is a point on its eastern margin, in front of the mouth of the river Abuna, which is the most western land in Brazil.

live along the western margin of the Paraguay, subdivided into various hordes: the most southern are called *Linguas* by the neighbouring Spaniards, and when they infest the aldeias of the province of St. Cruz de la Sierra, are there known by the name of *Xiriquanos*; others have the appellation of *Cambaz*. Those who possess the eastern vicinity of the same river, constitute the other two bodies: the southern are allied with the Spaniards; the northern with the Portuguese. The *Fecho dos Morros* (barricado of rocks) is the separating line. No difference is remarked of origin, idiom, and usages, among these three portions of Indians, otherwise declared enemies to each other. The allies of the Portuguese, extending from the Rio Mondego southward, are divided into seven hordes, or large aldeias, generally friends to each other, and without the least difference in any respect. Chagoteo, Pacachodeo, Adioeo, Atiadeo, Oleo, Laudeo, and Cadioeo, are the names by which they are distinguished. In none of these aldeias, which would be better designated as large towns, are there any acknowledged superior to the rest. Each horde is composed of three classes of persons: the first are a species of *noblesse*, entitled captains, and their wives and daughters have the distinction of donnas; the second are denominated soldiers, or men, whose military obedience descends from father to son; and the third, captives or slaves, comprising the prisoners of war and their descendants. There are but few of the first in each aldeia; the second are very numerous; and the third exceed many times the number of the others taken conjointly. The captains and soldiers have an intermixed origin. The slaves are of various nations, acquired in war, never undertaken with any other object than the augmentation of prisoners, in the number of which consists the degree of nobility or distinction of the captains. These irruptions are exterminatory, taking

away the lives of the elder people and the liberty of the younger. Such youthful captives soon forget their idioms and customs, and adopt those of the Guaycurues.

" The Guaycurus are of medium stature, well made, healthy, robust, and appear formed to the most painful and laborious undertakings. Bodily defects are exceedingly rare ; but blind persons sometimes are seen. Their teeth are black from the prodigious quantity of tobacco which they use. The women always carry a piece between the under-lip and gums. They paint the body with the dye of the *urucu* and *jenipapo*, in which operation much symmetry is preserved. The youth have no certain usage in the disposal of their lank hair ; the aged shave their heads, similar to the lay-Franciscans. The women likewise shave their heads around, and clip the hair, leaving it three inches in length at the top. Their physiognomy is broad, and presents nothing agreeable, in consequence of the dye which they introduce into the skin with thorns, forming lines that commence at the roots of the hair, and terminate at the eyelids or the cheeks, and in some instances at the chin, where they give it the appearance of a chess-board, an ash-colour being so indelibly fixed, that it continues through life. They are usually wrapped up in a large cotton cloth, from the neck to the feet, striped with various colours. The more ostentatious ornament themselves with shells, the mother-pearl appearing outwards ; some have upon them the figure of their horses, well drawn in black and white. Below this dress, they wear a very wide girdle, called an *ayulate*, without which a girl from her birth is never seen. Ornamental strings of silver, in necklaces and bracelets for the arms and legs, and a plate of the same metal at the breast, are generally displayed ; for the manufacture of which, a stone anvil and hammer are used. In former times, these ornaments consisted of wood, such as are yet

seen among some of the poor. Early in life they become meagre; and their skins, as well as those of the men at an advanced age, are remarkably wrinkled. The men have no other clothing than a narrow girdle of dyed cotton, which they tie round the middle of the body; and after they have had communication with the Europeans, they cover them with beads of divers colours, forming different devices. They ornament the head, arms, and legs with plumes of feathers of various colours. They have the under-lip perforated, in which is introduced a cylinder of wood, almost as thick as a writing pen, and three inches long; the richer class wearing them of silver; and in their ears they wear half-moons of the same metal. The men are diligent in hunting, fishing, gathering honey and wild fruits, and in the manufacture of arms and canoes. The women spin, manufacture clothes and girdles of cotton, and make cords, mats, &c.

"They breed all the species of domestic European birds and quadrupeds introduced into the country, and some peculiar to this continent, with great attention and care. Agriculture is held in contempt by them; and meat is their only aliment, which renders their stock of animals not over abundant, with the exception of horses, which they never eat. Owing to their incessantly riding on horseback, their legs are crooked. They do not use the saddle or stirrups, nor any substitute for them, and their bridles consist of cords. Their war-horses are not used for any other purpose, nor do they ever sell them. The women are mounted on horseback, between bundles of dried grass, upon a cloth which serves at the same time for a housing.

"The Guaycurus are dreaded by the surrounding nations, in consequence of the advantage they have in cavalry in their cruel wars, and the arms which they use, consisting of a club, or staff, of four or five spans in

length, and an inch in diameter; a lance somewhat thicker, and twelve feet long; a *trassado*, or large knife; and the bow and arrow. They are equipped with all those arms when they proceed upon their war-horses, in the following manner. They encircle themselves with a cord, between which and the body the club is introduced on the right side, the *trassado* on the left; with the left hand they govern the horse, and with the right, wield the lance, which they do not use when they carry the bow and arrow. They also use the lasso in their hunting excursions. A year does not elapse without their undertaking campaigns against, and making prisoners of the Guatos, Cayapos, Bororos, Xiquitos, Chamococos, (the last two are of the province of St. Cruz de la Sierra,) Guaxis, (who dwell about the heads of the Aranhahy,) Coroas, Caiavabas, Guannas, and other tribes. The Guannas are the most numerous; and among them alone is remarked the cultivation of some hortulans and cotton-trees.

"The Guaycurus content themselves with one wife; but the law is free to both parties to effect a separation, and contract a new alliance; such separations, however, are very rare. They have a general cemetery, which is a large open structure, covered with mats, where each family has a part staked off for its use. Above the sepulchres of the men are deposited their bows, arrows, and other arms. Those of distinguished warriors are decked with ornaments. Rich young females are decorated as if for the bridal day. They believe in a Creator of all, but to him they pay no kind of homage; also, in an inferior spirit, endowed with the knowledge of futurity, whom they denominate *Nanigogigo*. They admit the immortality of the soul; but it would appear that they have no idea of future recompenses proportioned to the conduct of life; they imagine that the souls of the captains are in a state of enjoyment after death, and that those of the people

wander about the cemetery. Their diviners acquire most credit by their pretended familiarity with the Nanigogigo, with which they are supposed to be privileged.

" It is considered as a beauty among these people, to have no hair upon the eyebrows, being particularly careful to extract it on its appearance. Their language abounds with words and phrases of soft and easy pronunciation. There is nothing more remarkable among the Guaycurus, than the inhuman practice of the mothers in destroying the embryo, until they arrive at the age of thirty, in order to avoid the inconveniences annexed to the birth and rearing of their offspring.

" The streets of their villages or towns are straight and wide; the houses are covered with mats of bulrushes. They sleep on the ground upon hides, and cover themselves with the cloths that the women spread over the two bundles of grass between which they ride on horseback. None of their dwelling-places are permanent. They are always near some river or lake, and continue while there are game, fish, fruits, and pasturage for the cattle. On experiencing any want, in a moment the town disappears, and the plains previously covered with thousands of animals, are deserted. On arriving at their destined place, another town rises almost in a moment, and the surrounding campos, where scarcely a few deer pastured, are on a sudden covered with numerous horses, oxen, and flocks of sheep. They manufacture an inebriating drink with honey and water, called *chicha*. Some express themselves tolerably well in the Portuguese language."*

Such is the vague and imperfect information with which we must for the present content ourselves, with regard to this tribe of American Tatars. In many respects, they

* Henderson's Brazil, pp. 207—11.

bear a resemblance to the Abipones of Paraguay, while their use of the *botoque*, or lip-plug, seems to mark their affinity to the Botucudoes of the eastern provinces.

The woods which border on the Igatimy, the Miamaya, and the Escopil, streams flowing from the Serro Amambahy into the Parana, are inhabited by the Cahans, or people of the wood; so called to distinguish them from their enemies, the Guaycurues, who keep the open country. Of this semi-civilised tribe we have a very singular account; they are evidently descendants of some of the Indians civilised by the Jesuits of Paraguay.

"The Cahans live in aldeias. Not more than thirty years ago, they had fifteen of those villages. They paint themselves with the dye of the *urucu*, perforate the underlip, and insert a cylinder of resin, transparent as crystal, secured by a small wooden pin at the upper extremity. The bow and arrow are their arms, made with instruments of flint and the sharpened teeth of the boar. They cultivate the cotton-tree, the produce of which they spin and weave in a method peculiar to themselves. Their vesture consists of a sort of *ponche*, in the form of a sack, made of cotton cloth, doubled and sewed in part at the corners, with an opening to introduce the head through, also with apertures for the arms, and tied by a cord round the waist. In the morning, they sing hymns to the Creator, accompanied with extravagant movements. Among them are men who pretend to be at once surgeons, doctors, divines, and priests: like the latter, they carry in their hands a cross, which custom they have unquestionably derived from the first Jesuit missionaries, who penetrated into the country, and who used a staff in the shape of a cross. In their district, there are woods of wild orange-trees, and prodigious numbers of bees."*

* Henderson's Brazil, p. 213.

The only *povoaçoes* in this district are, the fazenda of Camapuan, situated in lat. 19° 36′ S.; and Miranda, a *prezidio* on the river Aranhary or Mondego, founded in 1797. The Spaniards of Nova Coimbra have attempted to establish themselves at several points in this district, but have been obliged to abandon their stations.

The cantons of Cuyaba and Matto Grosso are, properly speaking, the only districts of the province which have been colonised. The latter contains the capital, the residence of the governor and the ouvidor, and the only parish at present in the comarca. Villa Boa (the good town) is situated in a champaign country, near the margin of the Guapore. The houses are of *taipé*, white-washed. It has a smelting-house, and, besides its parochial church, two hermitages. The Guapore originates nearly 100 miles north-east of Villa Bella. After flowing eighty miles in a southerly course, it runs nearly the same distance in a western direction; it then curves towards the north-west, and west-north-west; and ultimately joins the Mamore, forming the majestic Mandera. The Spaniards give the Guapore the name of Itenez, while it sometimes takes the name of the Mamore. Its banks are for the most part swampy and unhealthy. The rivers which join it by the right margin, the largest of which does not exceed 100 miles in length, issue from the western side of a continuation of the Serra Paricis running parallel with its course. Thirty miles to the east of the Guapore, the Jauru originates in the campos of the Serra Paricis, and after flowing a long way southward, bends to the east-south-east, and falls into the Paraguay in lat. 16° 24′ S. At this confluence, 170 miles south-east of Villa Bella, "a magnificent stone of European marble" was erected in 1754, as a boundary-mark between the Spanish and Portuguese territories, bearing the arms of each power turned towards their respective possessions, with the following inscription:—

Sub Joanne Quinto Lusitanorum
Rege Fidelissimo
Sub Ferdinando Sexto Hispaniæ
Rege Catholico
Justitia et Pax osculatæ sunt.
Ex Pactis Finium Regundorum
Conventis. Madriti. Idib. Januar.
M.DCC.L.

The Jauru runs principally through a flat and woody country. At a short distance from its margin, there is stated to be "a nitrous lake" furnishing a quantity of salt. The northern portion of the canton is occupied by the Serra Paricis, an elevated range with extensive sandy campos on its summits, inhabited by various aboriginal tribes.

The canton of Cuyaba, which lies to the east of Matto Grosso, is, probably, the most valuable, at it is the most richly diversified part of the province. It is said to abound with spacious plains, superb woods, and gently undulating eminences, sometimes rising to the grandeur of mountain scenery; and the greater portion is fertilised by numerous rivers. The Cuyaba, from which it derives its name, traverses it from north to south, falling into the Lourenço in lat. 17° 20′. On the east and south, it is separated from Bororonia by the latter river; while its western boundary is the mighty Paraguay. This river, according to Cazal, has its source in an elevated campo on the Serra Pary, a portion of the extensive Paricis, near the *Sete Lagoas* (seven lakes), which communicate with each other by narrow outlets. A little below the last of these, the river flows through a swampy country in a northerly direction for a short distance; it then winds round by the west, and takes a southward course. The first large river that joins it, is the Jauru. The range of elevated lands which skirt its eastern margin thus far, continues twenty-five miles below this confluence, to the point called Escalvada, where both margins begin to be flat, and are inter-

spersed with lakes. Seventy miles further southward, the western margin begins to be bordered by a narrow range of hills, called Serra Insua, Serra Doirados, and Serra Chaynez: they extend about seventy miles in length, but are broken in various parts, so as to afford outlets to three lakes lying behind them, which appear like the mouths of large rivers, when the Paraguay, at the season of its overflowings, makes them part of its expanded channel. The names of these lakes are Oberaba, Gahiba, and Mandiore. The first two, each ten miles in diameter, and about the same distance apart, communicate with each other. The Mandiore is twenty miles south of the Gahiba lake, and is fifteen miles in extent. It has more than one channel to the Paraguay: in front of the northernmost, which separates Serra Doirados from Serra Chaynez, the St. Lourenço discharges itself in lat. 18° 45′. The Tacoary has its embouchure in lat. 19° 15′, in front of a square mass of an elevated range called Serra Albuquerque. Eighteen miles further south are the mouths of the Mondego, near which a narrow island, seventy miles long, divides the Paraguay into two channels. Thirty-five miles south of the Mondego, are two high mounts, in front of each other, on the banks of the Paraguay: on the western mount is built Fort Coimbra. About the same distance beyond, an immense lake, twenty miles inland, called *Bahia Negra* (black lake), finds an outlet on its western margin. Sixty miles lower, it receives on its eastern bank the Queyma: eight miles to the south of this river, on the opposite side, is the Morro of Miguel Joze, on the skirt of which is built Fort Bourbon. Twenty-five miles further south, in lat. 21° 20′, is the *Fecho dos Morros* (barricado of rocks), where the waters of the Paraguay become contracted by a chain of low mountains, and another long rocky island again divides its channel. This is the limit between what is called the high and the low Paraguay; and here the

laky and swampy margins, which commence at Escalvada, (distant about 350 miles north,) finally terminate.* Between the Fecho and the city of Assumption, which stands in lat. 25° 22′, several large rivers enter the Paraguay; and between Assumption and the magnificent confluence of the Parana in lat. 27° 25′, the three branches of the large Pilco Mayo, and the Rio Verde or Colorado, which have their sources in the Andes, and, on the eastern side, the Piraju, the Cannabe, and the Tibicoary, enter the Paraguay. A hundred miles below the Parana, it receives the northern branch of the Salado, and, upwards of 170 miles further, its southern branch, called also Xalapos: at this point is situated the city of Santa Fé, in lat. 31° 35′. A little further, it receives the Terceiro or Carcapal, and then bending towards the east-south-east, for a hundred and forty miles further, gathering, on both margins, several smaller rivers, is finally joined, in lat. 34°, by the Uruguay, its last tributary. The Spaniards generally call it the Rio da Plata, after it receives the Pilco Mayo.

Villa Real de Cuyaba, the capital of the canton, is a larger and more flourishing place than Villa Boa, the seat of the provincial government. It stands near a small river,

* The expansion of the river in the intermediate space, during the inundations, which begin in April, and last till September, forms the sea or lake of Xarays, from 70 to 150 miles in width. At this period, a great part of the beds of the rivers St. Lourenco, Tocoary, Mondego, and others on the eastern side, as well as the lakes on the western side and the adjacent woods, become portions of this "periodical Caspian;" and the elevated lands assume the appearance of islands, inhabited by an accumulation of birds and wild animals. "While the floods continue, it is customary to navigate over the plains where the current is less rapid, traversing prodigious plantations of rice, annually reproduced by nature without any human assistance, or sustaining any damage from the waters, because it grows as the waters increase, always having more than a yard above water, and affording supplies to the passing canoes, into which the ears are bent, and then shaken with a pole."—*Henderson*, p. 221.

at one mile's distance from the Cuyaba. It contains a church and three chapels, all, as well as the houses, built of *taipé*: the streets are mostly paved. It is the residence of a bishop *in partibus* and a *juiz de fora*. The town and neighbourhood contained, in 1797, about 18,000 persons. In 1809, according to the information Mr. Mawe received, the population amounted to 30,000. The orange-tree grows here luxuriantly; the melon, water-melon, and pine-apple also flourish, and mandioc, maize, cotton, and sugar are cultivated by the inhabitants.

The only other place of consideration in the canton, is Villa Maria, situated on the eastern bank of the Paraguay, twenty-five miles from the mouth of the Jauru. Its inhabitants at present consist chiefly of Indians of various nations, but its advantageous position points it out as likely to become of some importance as a commercial town. There is a royal fazenda in the neighbourhood, and an *engenho* or sugar-work has recently been established here.

There still exist within both this canton and Matto Grosso, various hordes of Bororo Indians; (some who are designated as *Coroados*, shaven-crowns, and others *Barbados*, bearded;) but the gross of the population is stated to consist of mamalucoes descended from the alliance of the Paulistas with the Paricis Indians.

The gold-mines of Cuyaba, which led the adventurous Paulistas to form settlements in this remote district, were first discovered in 1718, by a *certanista*, in proceeding up the river Cuyaba in search of Indians. The first explorers of the country found vast quantities of gold, and in 1723, the prodigious amount of the royal fifths received at St. Paulo, excited in that city a universal passion for mining. "Every one was desirous of becoming a miner of Cuyaba, notwithstanding the calamities attached to so laborious and prolonged a voyage. Of more than 300 persons who, in

the year 1725, departed from St. Paulo, in upwards of twenty canoes, only two white men and three negroes escaped; all the rest were killed or made prisoners in an encounter with an armada of Payagoa Indians in the river Paraguay. In 1727, the governor of St. Paulo, Rodrigo Cesar de Menezes, arrived at the new arraial, to which he gave the name of Villa Real de Cuyaba. In 1730, a party of Paulistas, with the late ouvidor of the town at their head, were returning from Cuyaba with upwards of sixty arrobas (nearly 2,000 lb. weight) of gold, when they were attacked, near the mouth of the Tacoary, by an armada of eighty war-canoes, manned by more than 800 Indians; and only seventeen whites escaped by swimming to land. The gold which the Payagoas carried off, together with many prisoners, they disposed of in the city of Assumption at so low a rate, that six pounds weight is said to have been given by one Indian for a pewter plate. In 1732, another party of Paulistas, consisting of fifty canoes, was cut off by the Indians: a few only escaped to Cuyaba. It was now deemed necessary to send a powerful armament to clear the Paraguay of these formidable marauders. A desperate conflict, which lasted for several hours, took place in 1735, terminating, however, to the advantage of the Paulistas. In the same year, a road was opened to the territory of Goyaz; and intelligence being brought of new gold mines in Matto Grosso, almost the whole population of Cuyaba left that town for the west. In 1742, Manoel de Lima first discovered the navigation to Para, by descending the Guaypore, the Madera, and the Maranham, in a canoe, to that city. Four years afterwards, another adventurer descended by the Arinos, the Tapajos, and the Maranham to Para, and returned the following year by the Madera, with European merchandise; since which time this route has been frequented by traders. On the opening of the roads to Bahia and Rio de Janei-

ro, the route by way of Camapuan began to be less frequented; and the navigation of the Para has superseded, in great measure, the intricate course of the early adventurers.

Having now explored the utmost western limits of the Brazilian empire, we return to the coast, to pursue the description of the maritime provinces lying to the north of Rio de Janeiro. We are indebted almost entirely to the enterprising spirit of Prince Maximilian of Wied Nieuwied, for an accurate account of the tract of country lying between the 23d and the 13th parallels of south latitude. Having, in the former volume, followed the route taken by his highness, to the northern confines of the province of Rio,* we now rejoin him on entering the province of

ESPIRITO SANTO.

THE province thus uncouthly and profanely designated, comprehends three-fourths of the capitania given, in 1534, to Vasco Fernandez Coutinho, as a remuneration for his services in Asia. It extends a hundred miles in length, between the rivers Capabuan (or Itabapuana) and Doce, which separate it from Rio de Janeiro on the south, and Porto Seguro on the north. On the west, it borders on Minas Geraes. "The lofty and naked ridge of Middle Brazil," remarks Prince Maximilian, "in the provinces of Minas Geraes, Goyaz, and Pernambuco, is divided from the eastern coast, by a broad tract of high forests, which extend from Rio de Janeiro to the Bay of All Saints (Bahia), about eleven degrees of latitude, and which are not yet taken possession of by the Portuguese settlers: only a few roads have hitherto been opened, with infinite labour, along the rivers that traverse them. In

* See vol. i. p. 207.

these forests, where the primitive inhabitants, who are pressed upon at every other point, have till now enjoyed a serene and peaceful abode, we may still find those people in their original state."

Coutinho is said to have landed with only sixty persons to take possession of his capitania: with this small number, he engaged and put to flight the Indians, and founded the town now called Villa Velha (old town), where he constructed a fort, and established an *engenho* (sugar-work). On his return to Portugal to obtain supplies for his new colony, the settlement was attacked by the Goytacazes, and the survivors were driven beyond the Rio Cricare. Here, in a subsequent encounter, the Portuguese were again defeated, and were compelled to flee to their ships, their commander, the son of Mem da Sa, being slain. Ultimately, a decisive victory was obtained over the savages; but the Jesuits were the first who succeeded in making terms with the natives, and in 1551, Padre Alfonso Braz founded the college of Vittoria. Reverses of fortune, however, had disabled Coutinho for deriving any advantage from his possessions, and one of his descendants sold the territory, for 40,000 cruzadoes, to Francisco Gil d'Araujo, who, in his turn, abandoned it in despair, and one of his heirs sold it to the crown in the reign of John V.

Of all the old captaincies of Brazil, that of Espirito Santo has made the least progress. Cazal admits, that it had not undergone any considerable melioration, since its reversion to the crown, nor have the dominions of the Indians been materially contracted.* The civilised population is almost entirely confined to the coast, and even here they are liable to hostile attacks. Yet, the reported

* In the last half of the seventeenth century, the district of Espirito Santo is said to have contained only 500 Portuguese, and four Indian villages.

salubrity of the climate and fertility of the soil render this province highly deserving of the attention of Government. The greater part is still covered with virgin forests, in which are found the Brazil-wood, the cedar, the sassafras-tree, and various other resinous and aromatic species: no province possesses such an abundance of the tree which supplies the Peruvian balsam.

The journey from the Itabupuana northward to the banks of the Itapemirim, a distance of six or eight leagues, is esteemed so dangerous, owing to the excursions of the Puries, that it has been found necessary to establish a *quartel* or military post in this quarter. These savages were reported to be now really very desirous of living at peace with the whites. On the south bank of the Itapemirim is the small, newly built villa of the same name, seven leagues from Muribecca. It contains some good houses, but is a mere village, inhabited partly by small planters, partly by fishermen and a few mechanics. The river is very narrow, but a small trade is carried on by means of it, in the produce of the country, consisting of sugar, cotton, rice, millet, and timber. The Serra de Itapemirim, from which it descends, is seen at a great distance with remarkably jagged peaks. It is celebrated for the works for washing gold, called Minas de Castello, five days' journey up the river. That district was, however, so disturbed by the Tapuyas, that the few Portuguese settlers left it about forty years ago, and took up their abode in the town. The country higher up the river, is inhabited by these rude hordes, chiefly Puries; the Botucudoes, too, "the real tyrants of the wilderness," still make excursions to a considerable distance down the river. A road, however, has been opened through these dangerous wilds, which leads from Minas de Castello to the frontier of Minas Geraes, about twenty-two leagues distant.

A day's journey from Itapemirim brought the travellers to the Fazenda de Aga, not far from a *morro* of that name, a lofty, rounded, insulated mountain, which is seen rising from among the contiguous woods. Near Aga is the *povoaçao* of Piuma (or Ipiuma), where there is a wooden bridge thrown over the rivulet, three hundred paces in length; "a real curiosity in these parts." The waters of this little stream are of a dark coffee colour: they are discharged into the sea. After riding through a hilly country, presenting alternate woods and meadows, the travellers reached the Villa Nova de Benevente, seated at the foot of a hill on the north bank of the Iritiba or Reritigba, called also the Benevente. This village was founded by the Jesuits, who collected here 6000 Indians, and their church and convent still are seen on the eminence commanding the town. It was the largest *aldeia* on the coast, till most of the Indians were driven away by the hard service exacted for the crown, and the slavish manner in which they were treated. The whole district of Villa Nova does not now include above 800 inhabitants, of whom about 600 are Indians. The town is small, but has some good houses.

Villa de Goaraparim, the next town on this line of coast, derives its name from a narrow arm of the sea, which is often spoken of as a river, but is, in fact, a salt-water inlet. The town is poor, but somewhat larger than Benevente, and there are some considerable fazendas in the neighbourhood. The houses are only of one story, and the streets are unpaved. The district is said to contain about 3000 souls. The road to this place from Benevente, lies through majestic forests within hearing of the roaring of the Atlantic. "At one place," says Prince Maximilian, "we met with an extremely beautiful grove, consisting entirely of *airi* palms. Young vigorous trees of this species, from twenty to thirty feet high, rise with

their straight, dark-brown stems, surrounded with thorny rings. Their beautifully feathered leaves skreened the damp ground from the scorching noon-tide sun; while younger ones, which had not yet any stem, formed the brush-wood, above which old dead palms, withered and decayed, projected like broken columns. Upon these trees, devoted to destruction, the solitary, yellow-hooded wood-pecker, or the beautiful species with the red head and neck, was at work. The flower of the flame-coloured heliconia covered the low bushes near us, round which twined a beautiful convolvulus, with the finest azure-blue bells. In this magnificent forest, the ligneous creeping plants again shewed themselves in all their originality, with their curvatures and singular forms. We contemplated with admiration the sublimity of this wilderness, which was animated only by toucans, parrots, and other birds." Beyond this wood, at two leagues from Benevente, is a collection of fishermen's huts called the *povoaçao de Obu;* and not far from Goaraparim is another hamlet, containing sixty or eighty families of fishermen, called *Miaipé*, where Prince Maximilian took up his quarters for the night. He halted again at Goaraparim; the next day, he reached a little fishing hamlet on the coast, called *Ponta da Fruta;* and on the day following, five leagues further through marshy meadows and woodland, brought him to Villa Velha on the Rio de Espirito Santo, which gives its name to the province. This river, which is of considerable magnitude at its mouth, rises in the mountains on the frontiers of Minas Geraes, and descending, with many windings, through the extensive ancient forests of the Tapuyas, issues forth at the foot of one of those higher chains of mountains which stretch towards the sea. Of these, the most elevated point is the morro of Mestre-Alvaro, a mountain almost circular, about three miles inland. That which skirts the bay of Espirito

Santo, is called Monte Moreno. The proper name of the river itself, according to Cazal, is the Santa Maria; and it is to be wished that it might supersede the name of the bay. It is stated to be navigable to the first fall, a distance of forty miles, and the tide runs up about twelve miles, to the mouth of the river Serra, which joins it on the left bank. Several other streams fall into it, admitting or partial navigation.

Villa Velha, a "little, wretched, open town," stands on the south bank of the river, not far from its mouth, at the entrance of the "beautiful bay." It is built in a sort of square, having the church at one extremity, and the *casa da camara* or town-hall at the other. The town consists of low, clay huts, is unpaved, and is evidently going to decay. Its only inhabitants are fishermen. On a high, conical hill, covered with wood, immediately adjoining the town, stands the celebrated Franciscan convent of Nossa Senhora da Penha, one of the richest in Brazil, dependent on the abbey of St. Bento at Rio. "It is said," adds Prince Maximilian, "to possess a wonder-working image of the Madonna, for which reason numerous pilgrims resort thither; but, at the period of our visit, there were only two ecclesiastics on the spot. It is well worth the trouble, to ascend the steep eminence, in order to enjoy the inexpressibly grand prospect which there offers itself to the view. It overlooks the wide expanse of the ocean, and, on the land side, fine chains of mountains and various peaks, with interjacent valleys, from which the broad river issues in the most picturesque manner imaginable."

About half a league from Villa Velha, on the opposite side of the bay, stands the present capital of the province, Villa da Victoria. It is built, according to Cazal, "on an amphitheatrical site, on the western side of an island

fifteen miles in circumference," and is thus described by his highness of Wied Nieuwied.

"The *cidade de Nossa Senhora da Victoria* is a pretty, neat place, with considerable buildings, constructed in the old Portuguese style, with balconies of wooden lattices, paved streets, a tolerable large town-hall, and the Jesuits' convent, occupied by the governor, who has a company of regular troops at his disposal. Besides several convents, there are a church, four chapels, and a hospital (misericordia). The town is, however, rather dull, and visiters, being very uncommon, are objects of great curiosity. The coasting-trade is not unimportant; several vessels are in consequence always lying here, and frigates can sail up to the town. The neighbouring *fazendas* produce much sugar, mandioc flour and rice, bananas, and other articles, which are exported along the coast. Several forts protect the entrance of the fine river Espirito Santo; one directly at the mouth; a second battery, built of stone, higher up, with eight iron guns; and still further up, on the hill between the latter and the town, a third battery of seventeen or eighteen guns, a few of which are brass. The town is built rather unevenly, on pleasant hills; and the river flowing past it, is here every where enclosed within high mountains, partly consisting of rocks, which are in many places naked and steep, and covered with creeping plants. The beautiful surface of the broad river is broken by several verdant islands, and the eye, as it follows its course up the country, every where finds an agreeable point of repose in lofty, verdant, wood-covered mountains."

Prince Maximilian took up his abode for a few days, at a small fishing village on the river Jucu, which he had crossed in the route to Villa Velha, distant about four leagues from Victoria. The river falls into the ocean

about three miles to the south of the entrance of the bay: it abounds in fish, and there are many wildly picturesque spots near its banks. About four leagues up this river is the large fazenda of Araçatiba, the property, at that time, of a colonel Falcão, an opulent planter possessing several other estates in the neighbourhood, and to whom belonged the house at Barra de Jucu assigned to Prince Maximilian as his temporary residence. The great forest of Araçatiba, through which lies the route to the fazenda, is described as an awful wilderness. Emerging from its solemn gloom, the travellers unexpectedly came into an open country, where they were agreeably surprised all at once to see a large white building, presenting an extensive front of two stories, with two small towers, situated on a beautiful, green, level spot at the foot of the lofty morro which gives name to the fazenda. Near the house is a church; and at the foot of a hill, are seen the negro huts, the sugar-mill, and the farm buildings. The estate employs 400 negroes. The sons of the proprietor resided on separate fazendas in the neighbourhood. About a league distant, on a romantic spot on the river Jucu, entirely surrounded with lofty primeval forests, is a second fazenda, called Coroaba; not far from which is the military post of St. Agostinho, where the governor of the province was at that time superintending the erection of a church, and the formation of a road to Minas Geraes. The government had settled there about forty families, who came from the Azores. "These people," says his highness, "who live in great poverty, bitterly complain of their wretched condition, splendid promises having been made to them, but not performed."*

* "Near the river Jucu, at a great distance above its mouth, in a fertile district, is beginning to flourish the arraial of the same

Proceeding along the coast, two days' journey from Villa da Victoria, is Villa Nova de Almeida,—a large village of civilised Indians, founded by the Jesuits on elevated ground near the mouth of the Rio dos Reys Magos (river of the royal magi).* In no other parish of the province has the number of native Indians increased so much as here. It has a large stone church, and contains in its whole district, nine leagues in circumference, about 1,200 souls.

"The inhabitants of the village," adds Prince Maximilian, "are chiefly Indians, but there are also some Portuguese and negroes. Many possess houses here, to which they come from their plantations on Sundays and holidays only. In the Jesuits' convent, which now serves for the residence of the priest, there are still some old works of that order, which is a rarity, as the libraries in all the other convents have not been taken care of, but destroyed or dispersed. The Jesuits here formerly gave instruction in the *lingoa geral* (general language, i. e. of the Indians). Their chapel, Dos Reys Magos, is said to have been very beautiful. The place is dull, and seems not to be populous; much poverty also prevails there. The Indians derive their subsistence from their plantations of mandioc and maize; they also export some wood and earthenware, and carry on a fishery, which is not inconsiderable, on the sea

name, inhabited by white agriculturists, and abounding with game." *Henderson*, p. 296. This, probably, is the station referred to by Prince Maximilian by the name of St. Agostinho.

* After crossing the river, the road lay through a winding valley, directly under a gentle verdant eminence which is surmounted by the remarkable rock, or crag, called Jucutucoara: after crossing the little river Muruim, the route led along the coast three leagues to the village of Praya Molle. Here the travellers lodged. Early the next morning, they reached another village called Carapebucu, from which place a wooded tract, four leagues in length, extends to Almeida.

and the river Sahuanha, or Dos Reys Magos, which runs past the village.*

"The woods traversed by the Sahuanha, (which, in the ancient Indian language, was called Apyaputang,) are said to be inhabited by Coroadoes and Puries. Further on, from the Sahuanha to the Mucuri, the sea-coast is inhabited almost entirely by single families of Indians. They speak the Portuguese language only, and have exchanged their bow and arrows for the musket: even their dwellings differ very little from those of the Portuguese settlers. Their principal occupations are agriculture and the sea-fishery. To the north of the Sahuanha, the whole coast is covered with thick woods. In a few hours you come to the river Pyrakahassu (great fish river). Here, at the *barra* or mouth, is a hamlet of a few houses, called Aldea Velha; and rather higher up the river, a considerable village founded by the Jesuits, who collected a great number of Indians on this spot. Their chief subsistence is derived from shell and other fish; whence great heaps of shells are still found on the bank of the river. Some persons have been inclined to ascribe to them a different origin; but several writers confirm the statement of the savages being great oyster-eaters, and circumstances sufficiently explain the matter: it cannot, therefore, be doubted, that these accumulations of shells originate from the repasts of the ancient inhabitants."†

* One of the author's fellow-travellers, Mr. Sellow, subsequently witnessed here the singular mode of fishing with the branches of the *tingi* tree, which Condamine mentions as practised in the Amazons' river. "They cut branches of the *tingi* tree" (tinguy, a species of paullinia), "bruise them, tie them in bundles, and throw them into the water, especially where it has but little fall: sometimes a dam is formed of them directly across to stop the fish, which, becoming intoxicated by the juice mingled with the water, rise to the surface or die, or may easily be taken by the hand."

† Maximilian's Travels, pp. 165—7.

The fourth day, after crossing the Pyrakahassu, here a deep, broad and rapid stream, the travellers again entered a beautiful forest; on emerging from which, their road lay for four leagues along an uninteresting tract of coast, broken by a succession of small promontories and inlets, to the *quartel do Riacho*,—a military post where they found an officer and six privates. From this place, a fatiguing journey of eight leagues through deep sand, brought them, late the next night, to a similar post, called the *quartel da Regencia*, at the mouth of the Rio Doce, the boundary of the province, and the most considerable river between Rio de Janeiro and Bahia. At a short distance from the coast, between the quartel do Riacho and the Doce, extends a considerable lake called *Lagoa dos Indios*, to which the Riacho (rivulet) forms an outlet.

The river Doce (sweet river), it has already been mentioned in the description of Minas Geraes, assumes that name after the confluence of the Rio Piranga with the Ribeiro do Carmo. It runs through a considerable extent of country, forming several small falls, three of which succeeding each other at short intervals, are called the *Escadinhas* (stairs). Two miles below these falls, the Doce receives the Mandu, which comes from the interior, running north-north-east between woods, and is navigable for canoes.

"The banks of this beautiful river," says Prince Maximilian, speaking of the Doce, "are covered with thick forests, which are the haunt of a great number of different animals. Here are frequently found the anta or American tapir, two kinds of wild swine (the *caytetu* or peccary, and the *porco a quechada branca*), two species of deer, and above seven varieties of the cat kind, among which the spotted ounce and the black tiger are the largest and most dangerous. But the rude, savage Botucudo, the aboriginal inhabitant of this country, is far

more formidable than all those beasts of prey, and is the terror of these impenetrable forests. This part of the country is still very thinly peopled, so that there is no communication kept up, except along the river. A few weeks ago, indeed, a forest path, here called *picade*, was opened along the south bank; but it is very far from completed, and, on account of the savages, is not to be passed, except by such as are well provided with arms. The Conde de Linhares, late minister of state, had particularly directed his attention to this fertile and beautiful country. He established new military stations, and built the village now called after him Linhares, eight or ten leagues up the river, at the place where the first military station had formerly been. He sent thither deserters and other criminals, to people the new colony; and these settlements would certainly have prospered in a short time, had not death too soon carried off that active minister. Since that period, this district has been entirely neglected, and unless more energetic measures are adopted, will probably soon be completely desolate."

Prince Maximilian, desirous of exploring the banks of this river, embarked on the following morning in a long canoe rowed by six soldiers. The annexed plate will serve to illustrate the author's description of this singular excursion.

"In order to ascend the Rio Doce, when it is at its height, four men at least are necessary, who propel the canoe with long poles (*varas*). As there are every where shallow places, which in the dry season appear as sand-banks, the poles can always reach them, even when the water is high; and with the most favourable combination of circumstances, it is possible to reach Linhares in one day, but not till late in the evening.

"The weather was very fine, and when we had become accustomed to the rocking of the narrow canoe, caused by

the soldiers walking backwards and forwards to push it along, we found the excursion very agreeable. When it was quite day-light, we saw the broad surface of the rapid stream glistening in the morning sun. The distant banks were so thickly covered with gloomy forests, that in the whole of the long tract which we passed, there was not a single open spot which would have afforded room even for a house. Numerous islands of various sizes and forms rise above the surface of the water; they are covered with ancient trees of the most luxuriant verdure. Each has its particular name, and their number is said to increase the further you ascend. The water of the Rio Doce, when at its height, is turbid and yellowish, and is universally asserted by the inhabitants to generate fevers. It abounds in fish: even the saw-fish (*pristis serra*) comes up far above Linhares, and into the *lagoa* of Juparanan, where it is frequently caught.

"From the forests we heard the cries of numerous monkeys, particularly the *barbados*, the *saïassus*, &c. Here it was that we first saw in their wild state the magnificent maccaws (*psittacus macao*, Linn.) which are among the chief ornaments of the Brazilian forests; we heard their loud-screaming voices, and saw these splendid birds soaring above the crowns of the lofty *sapucaya* trees. We recognised them at a distance by their long tails, and their glowing red plumage shone with dazzling splendour in the beams of the unclouded sun. Perroquets, maracanas, maitaccas, tiribas, curicas, camutangas, nandayas, and other species of parrots, flew, loudly screaming, in numerous flocks from bank to bank; and the large and stately Muscovy duck (*anas moschata*, Linn.) alighted on the branch of a cecropia, in the margin of the forest on the bank of the river. The black skimmer (*rynchops nigra*, Linn.) sat motionless and with contracted neck upon the sand-banks: toucans and the çurucuas, (*trogon*

viridis, Linn.) uttered their loud cries. These wild animals, and the savage Botocudoes, who are now, however, more rare, are the sole inhabitants of the banks of this river. There are scarcely any settlers; in two places only, a few persons, sufficiently provided with arms for their defence, have fixed themselves. They always carry their guns with them, when they go to their plantations; and those who have no fire-arms, have at least one of the bows called *bodoc*, to discharge balls and stones. It is but occasionally, and in their roving excursions, that the Botocudoes appear in these parts so far down the river.

" Towards noon, we reached the little island called from its shape *Carapuça* (Cap). Here our weary people took some rest, and we found it absolutely impossible to reach Linhares this day. To secure our vessel from the rapid current of the river, we ran up between the main and an island, into a narrow channel, where a number of beautiful birds, especially parrots, were flying about, and the fine red maccaws produced a singularly striking effect as the setting sun illumined their scarlet plumage. The banks of these islands and of the channel were for the most part thickly overgrown with the high fan-like reed, the sheath of whose flower is used by the Botocudoes for their arrows. When evening approached, our soldiers deliberated whether it would be better to pass the night on the Ilha Comprida (long island), or on one of the others. The first was rejected, because it is divided from the shore by only a narrow and shallow channel, and we should not have been secure against a visit from the savages. We therefore proceeded to the Ilha de Gambin, where the governors used formerly to pass the night when they visited the colony on the Rio Doce. The present governor has not continued these visits, and we found the bushes on the shore so thickly grown together, that one of my hunters was obliged to clear a place with his wood-knife,

before we could set foot on shore. A large and chearful fire was soon blazing in an open spot, whence a large owl (*curuja*) and a Muscovy-duck flew away, affrighted at the unexpected guests. We suffered some inconvenience from the swarms of mosquitoes, but slept quietly till the morning.

" We left the island very early, proceeded up the river past several other islands, and into a channel between the Ilha Comprida and the north bank of the river. The current was by no means so strong here, but then we met with many fallen trunks of trees and large branches, which we had to clear away, before we could advance further. The bushes and lofty ancient trees, which border this channel, present the most diversified and magnificent spectacle. Various kinds of cocoas, especially the elegant *palmitto,* (in other parts called *jissara,*) with its tall, slender stem, and the small bright, green, beautiful feathery crown, adorn these dark forests, from the recesses of which the calls of unknown birds strike the ear. Below, close to the water, were some splendid flowers, still new to us, among which were a convolvulus (or a plant of that genus) with a remarkably large white flower, and a plant resembling a bean, of the class *diadelphia*, with a large deep yellow flower, which twined about the bushes in thick close wreaths. A *jacaré*,* quietly basking in the

* The jacare of the east coast of Brazil is far inferior to the gigantic crocodile of the old world, and even to those met with in the countries of South America nearer to the equator. Prince Maximilian describes one which the party shot in the Paraiba : it was about six feet long, the colour of a greenish grey, with some dark transverse stripes, especially on the tail ; the belly of a bright yellow. This species is not feared : they are never more than eight or nine feet in length. Some of the fishermen shewed marks on their feet, which, they said, were caused by the bite of this animal, and they have been known to seize and devour dogs when swimming across the river ; but this traveller considers the

sun, fled at the sound of our oars. We soon came to several islands, upon which the people of Linhares had made plantations; for it is only on these islands that they are quite safe from the savages, who have no canoes, and therefore cannot cross, except where the breadth and depth of the river are inconsiderable. The officer called guarda mor, resides in the Ilha do Boi (ox island), and the priest of Linhares on the Ilha do Bom Jesus. Towards noon, we came in sight of Linhares, and landed on the north bank, after having with great exertion made our way against the rapid current, in doing which we broke two of our poles.

"Linhares is still a very inconsiderable settlement, notwithstanding the pains which, as we have above stated, the late minister Count Linhares took for its improvement. By his order the buildings were erected in a square, upon a spot cleared of wood, near the bank of the river, and on a steep cliff of clay. The houses of the place are small, low, covered at top with cocoa or uricanna leaves, of earth, and not plastered. It has yet no church, and mass is read in a small house. In the middle of the square formed by the buildings, there is a wooden cross, to form which, the head of a pretty large sapucaya tree, that grew there, has merely been lopped off, and a transverse beam nailed to it. The inhabitants have laid out their plantations partly in the wood surrounding the village, partly in the islands in the river.

"In order to protect this settlement in general from the attacks and cruelties of the Botocudoes, eight stations have been established, which are pushed forward in different directions into the great forests: they are also at

stories told of their voracity as fabulous. They are sometimes eaten by the negroes. The one shot diffused a powerful and very disagreeable musky smell.

the same time especially destined to protect the commercial intercourse which it has of late been attempted to open up the river with Minas Geraës. In fact, soldiers have already come down from that province, who were in sufficient numbers, well armed and provided with the defensive coat called *gibao d'armas*. These coats, some of which are kept at all the stations, are an indispensable covering against the arrows which the savages discharge with great force. They are wide, made of cotton, and thickly lined with several layers of cotton wadding, have a high stiff collar, which covers the neck, and short sleeves that protect the upper part of the arm; they come down to the knee, but are very inconvenient on account of their weight, especially in hot weather. The strongest arrow, even when discharged near at hand, does not easily penetrate such a coat, and it never has force enough to inflict any serious wound. The people indeed place too much confidence in these coats, for they assured us that even a ball would not pierce them. In order to convince myself of the truth of the assertion, I directed one of my hunters to fire at one with a rifle at the distance of eighty paces, and the ball penetrated both sides of the coat, which besides was not filled out. It appeared, however, on further trials, that the largest shot, fired at the distance of sixty paces, fell flattened to the ground, without penetrating, and that these coats are, therefore, a sufficient defence against arrows.

"At Capitania and other places, they make this kind of coats of silk; these are indeed much lighter, but far more expensive. In the last action near Linhares, an uncommonly strong Botocudo discharged an arrow with extraordinary force, and at a short distance, at one of the soldiers. It penetrated the coat, and wounded the wearer but slightly in the side; yet, even an arrow that is repelled, always gives a violent shock."

Some distance beyond Linhares, in the woods, is the second station of Linhares, (the village being considered as the first,) with twenty-three soldiers. On the south side of the Rio Doce, two stations have been established higher up the river; one, at Anadya, of twelve soldiers; another of twenty men, higher up, at Porto de Souza.* The commanding officer at Linhares is obliged to make the tour of all the posts, a journey of ninety leagues, once a month. Soldiers are sent out from the quartels, to patrole the woods; but the savages often attack the plantations, and many inhabitants of Linhares had been killed by them. The settlement, which might easily be made one of the most important places on the east coast, was, in fact, at this time, in so critical a situation, that its eventual abandonment appeared to Prince Maximilian almost inevitable.

Not far from Linhares, on the north side of the Doce, is the extensive *lagoa de Juparanan*, communicating with the river by a deep channel, about sixty feet broad, and a league and a half in length. "This lake, which is surrounded by hilly banks, is about seven leagues in length from south-east to north-west, half a league broad, and from sixteen to eighteen leagues in circumference. Its depth is unequal, but, in many places, it is from eight to twelve fathoms. This great mass of water is formed by a little river and several streams that run into the lake from the north-north-west. Near Linhares, it discharges itself through the above-mentioned channel into the Rio Doce, but rises considerably when strong south winds partly prevent it from flowing out by this channel. The bed and the banks of the lake are fine sands, on which

* This *prezidio*, according to Cazal, is two miles below the mouth of the Maudu. Its design is stated to have been to prevent the smuggling of gold from Minas Geraes in this direction. It promised to become a considerable *povoacao*.

ferruginous sandstone is here and there found. About five leagues from the entrance is a pretty little island of granite, which, on account of its distance from the bank, is not visited by the savages, and therefore affords a secure retreat to the fishermen."

The large canoe in which the travellers descended the river in returning, brought them to the quartel of Regencia in four hours,—a distance which had occupied a day and a half in ascending the stream. On the following day, they prosecuted their journey northward to Caravellas. We now enter on the province of

PORTO SEGURO.

Bounded by the rivers Doce and Belmonte on the south and north, like the Espiritu Santo, its western boundaries are indeterminate towards Minas Geraes, the intermediate country being in the possession of the Indians. It lies between 19° 33′ and 15° 25′ south latitude,* and is consequently about sixty-five leagues in length. It was on this part of the coast that Cabral first landed, and took possession for the crown of Portugal, of Brazil.† "But if," remarks Mr. Southey, "the port from which the province is named be the place where Cabral first anchored, his ships must have been of no considerable burthen, or the depth of the port must have diminished; for, within the bar, it shallows to twelve feet."

When Pedro Campo Tourinho, its first donatory, ar-

* Mr. Henderson says, between 15° 54′ and 19° 31′ south latitude. But we have given the latitude of the Rio Doce on the authority of Mr. Lindley, which agrees with Prince Maximilian's map, and that of the Belmonte on the authority of the latter document.

† See vol. i. p. 8.

rived in this port, he found many of his countrymen there, some of whom had been more than thirty years in the country, living, with their half-Indian progeny, in perfect harmony with the natives. In a few years, he found himself the lord of a considerable and flourishing town, to which was given the name of Santa Cruz. It was begun upon Cabralia Bay (the bay of Cabral); but the settlement was transferred to the banks of the Joâo de Tyba, four miles to the northward, in consequence, Cazal states, of its more favourable soil. Besides Santa Cruz, Tourinho founded the town of St. Amaro, three miles to the south of Porto Seguro, which was afterwards demolished by the Abatyra Indians in 1564. At his death, he transmitted the colony to his son in a very flourishing state. In 1556, it was sold by the daughter of Tourinho, on the decease of her brother, to Don John de Lancastre, Duke d'Aveiros, whose heirs retained the possession till 1758, when, on the confiscation of the property of the Duke d'Aveiros, after the attempt to assassinate the King (Joseph I.), the captaincy reverted to the Crown. It was then in a very wretched state, and contained only two towns. Those of Juassema and St. Andre, founded by the duke, had been destroyed, among other places, by the Indians. The Jesuits, who founded a college in the capital in 1553, with a view to prosecute their labours among the Indians of this province, left only two aldeias entirely Indian, at the time of their expulsion. In fact, less progress has been made in civilising the aborigines in Porto Seguro, than even in Espiritu Santo, and this captaincy is still more backward in cultivation. The civilised inhabitants are confined wholly to the neighbourhood of the coast, and the interior is almost a continued forest abounding with the finest timber.

From the banks of the Rio Doce to the St. Matthæus, a dreary, uninhabited wilderness extends along the coast,

twenty leagues in length: for the greater part of the way, not even fresh water is to be found. Cazal states, that, from the Doce as far as a league to the north of Jucurucu, the lands are so flat, that they scarcely exceed the level of the highest tides. In the whole of this tract, more than a hundred miles, not a mountain, he says, nor even a small elevation is to be seen. But this appears to be incorrect. At two leagues from Regencia, is the *quartel de Monserra*, near which is a long, narrow lake, called *Lagoa de Juparanan da Praya*, (to distinguish it from the larger lake of Juparanan near Linhares,) communicating with the sea by a broad channel, which is dry at low water. Some leagues further, in a small, low valley, is another lake, called Piranga; and beyond this, the road crosses the *Barra seca*, the outlet of a third lake, abounding in fish.* In this neighbourhood are extensive campos. While encamped, for the night, in the midst of this dreary wilderness, unable, for the want of fresh water, to make use of the provisions they had brought, Prince Maximilian and his party were supplied with a supper by very unexpected means.

"While our people were employed in fetching some sea-water, and in picking up drift-wood on the beach, we found to our great surprise, at a short distance from our fire, a prodigious sea-turtle (*testudo mydas*, Linn.) which was just going to deposit its eggs. Nothing could be more welcome to our hungry company; the animal seemed to have come expressly to provide us with a supper. Our presence did not disturb it; we could touch it, and even lift it up; but to do this, it required the united strength

* Cazal mentions only one lake between the Doce and the St. Matthæus, which he calls the lake Tapada, and describes to be "of considerable length from east to west, but very narrow."—*Henderson*, p. 304.

of four men. Notwithstanding all our exclamations of surprise and our deliberations what to do with it, the creature manifested no sign of uneasiness but a kind of hissing, nearly like the noise made by the geese when any one approaches their young. It continued to work, as it had commenced, with its fin-like hinder feet, digging in the sand a cylindrical hole from eight to twelve inches broad; it threw the earth very regularly and dexterously, and as it were keeping time on both sides, and began immediately after to deposit its eggs.

"One of our soldiers laid himself all along on the ground near the purveyor of our kitchen, and took the eggs out of the hole as fast as the turtle deposited them; and in this manner we collected 100 eggs in about ten minutes. We considered whether we should add this fine animal to our collections; but the great weight of the turtle, which would have required a mule for itself alone, and the difficulty of loading such an awkward burden, made us resolve to spare its life, and to content ourselves with its eggs.

"Those huge animals, the midas and the soft-shelled turtle (*testudo mydas* and *coriacea*), as well as the *testudo caretta*, or *cauanna*, deposit their eggs in the sand in the warmest months in the year, particularly in this uninhabited part of the coast, between the Riacho and the Mucuri; they come on shore for this purpose in the evening twilight, drag their heavy bodies up the sandy coast, dig a hole, in which they deposit their eggs, fill it up with sand, which they tread down, and an hour or two after sun-set, return to the sea. This was the case with the turtle which had so amply supplied us; when we came back to the strand a few hours afterwards, it was gone; it had filled up the hole, and the broad track left by it in the sand, shewed that it had returned to its proper element. A single turtle of this kind can furnish an abundant re-

past with its eggs for a whole company; for the midas is said to lay at once ten or twelve dozen, and the soft-shelled from eighteen to twenty dozen. These eggs are a very nutritious food, and are therefore eagerly sought after on this desert coast by the Indians, and in the neighbourhood, of the colony, also by the whites.

"Our frugal supper was soon finished; we afterwards kindled several small fires between the bushes of dwarf-palms, in order to keep the beasts of prey from our mules. The following morning, we found on the sand the fresh prints of the feet of large animals of the cat kind, which had been prowling about during the night."

The *Barra de St. Matthæus*,* which the travellers reached the second evening, is a little village of about twenty-five houses. Fifteen miles (according to Cazal—Prince Maximilian says, about eight leagues) above the bar of the river, is the town of St. Matthæus, situated in the midst of swamps, which render the place far from healthy, but the fertility of the soil has attracted numerous settlers to this quarter. "As one of the newest towns in the province of Porto Seguro," says Prince Maximilian, "it is in a thriving condition. It contains about 100 houses, and has in its district nearly 3000 inhabitants, both whites and people of colour. The inhabitants cultivate a great deal of mandioc, and export annually 60,000 alquieres of flour, and also planks from the neighbouring forests." The orange, the lemon, and the water-melon flourish luxuriantly. Eight leagues from the town of St. Matthæus, up the river, is the station of Galveyas, the last military post in this direction, and no cultivated land is found beyond.

* The mouth of this river is placed, in Arrowsmith's map, in latitude 18° 15'. Prince Maximilian makes it lie in 18° 45'; and the former, he considers as answering to the situation of the Mucŭri.

The river St. Matthæus, originally called the Cricare, has its source in Minas Geraes, and descends through ancient forests, full of various savage tribes, forming several small falls, and receiving, in its course, several small streams. Among these the principal are the Rio de St. Anna, which joins it on the northern margin, not far from its embouchure, the Rio Preto or Mariricu, and the St. Domingos. Cazal mentions the large river Cotache as joining it on the left margin, soon after the last fall; it is probably one of the above-mentioned under another name. The banks of this river are the most productive part of the district. In the adjoining woods, the wild Indians are very numerous. The northern bank is frequented by Patachoes, Cumanachoes, Machacalies, and other tribes, as far as Porto Seguro. The southern bank is believed to be chiefly occupied by Botucudoes, who are much feared by other tribes. All are at constant warfare with the whites, and the year before, seventeen persons had been killed by them. In this river is found a rare animal, the manati or *peixe-boi*, (sea-calf) of the Portuguese; it yields a large quantity of blubber, and its flesh is esteemed a delicacy. An abundance of other fish is also found here.

About half a league from St. Matthæus, the little river Guajinteba falls into the sea. Three leagues up the river is the fazenda of *As Itaünas*, which is also a sort of military station. Beyond this, three small streams, the Riacho Doce, the Rio das Ostras, and the Riacho da Barra Nova, also discharge into the Atlantic. At the mouth of the latter is a small hamlet on a "moderately high, but steep eminence." In the evening, the travellers reached the Villa de St. Joze do Portalegre, situated at the mouth of the Mucuri, distant, according to Cazal, nearly thirty miles from the St. Matthæus.

This town, which originally bore the name of the river,

but is now commonly called Portalegre, is a small place, containing not above forty houses, forming three sides of a quadrangle open to the sea, with a small chapel in the middle. Sheep, swine, and goats feed in the area. The inhabitants are chiefly Indians, and are very poor; but since Prince Maximilian's journey to these parts, some trade has been attracted to the place, and eventually, the navigation of the river, and the opening of the projected road along its banks to Villa do Principe in Minas Geraes, promise to render it a flourishing town.* Almost all the fine species of wood found on the eastern coast of Brazil, abound in the forests of this district. About a day's journey and a half up the river, a new fazenda had recently been established by the Conde da Barca, at a spot called, from the number of araras or maccaws, Morro d'Arara, on the banks of a spacious lake. Here, Prince Maximilian took up his residence for several months, leading the life of a genuine back-woodsman, with which his highness united, with indefatigable zeal, the pursuits of the naturalist.

"In these solitary wildernesses," he says, "the chace was our most agreeable, most useful, and indeed only occupation; and though the insecurity of the forests laid us under many restraints, and obliged us to make it a rule never to go out, except in sufficiently numerous parties, yet we always procured abundance of game. Whenever we went out of our huts in the morning, we heard the loud drum-like voice of the barbados (*mycetes*), and the hoarse growl of the gigo, another hitherto non-descript monkey; the maccaws, which flew loudly screaming over our huts, in pairs, threes, or fives, joined in this noisy concert, which re-echoed through the woods;

* Roads were at this time being opened, by order of Government, (1817,) along the Mucuri, the Belmonte, the Ilheos, the Espirito Santo, and the Itapemirim, to Minas Geraes.

and we were in like manner surrounded by flocks of parrots, of schaüas, maitacas, jurus, (*psittacus pulverulentus*, Linn.) curicas, and many other kinds.

"At the huts, our people were still employed in completing the roofs. The two larger buildings, in which I lived, in company with the *ouvidor*, the two naval captains, and Kramer, the German millwright, were provided with clay walls, and the roofs were finished. For the latter they used the leaves of the uricanna, a palm which has a small pliable stem: the beautiful large-feathered leaves (*folia abrupte pinnata*) grow on slender stalks; several of them are formed into a bundle; the stalks, which are very long, are then twisted round a lath of cocoa-wood, and bound together under it with a *cipo verdadeira* (*bauhinia*), which is long enough to bind one bundle to another. The laths, with the leaves thus attached, are laid over one another in such a manner that two thirds of their breadth are covered. The ridge of the roof is then covered with other leaves, particularly the long cocoa fans, in order to render it quite water-proof. Such a roof, which they very well understand how to make here, is light and secure; care must, however, be taken to permit smoke sometimes to circulate through it, because otherwise the insects would destroy the dry leaves in the first year.

"A spacious hut was now erecting for a workshop for the smith; for, on account of the hardness of the different woods which were to be cut and worked, the tools very frequently stood in need of repairs. The smith employed here, was an inhabitant of the country on the Alcobaça, whom the *ouvidor*, to punish him for some fault, had ordered to be taken from his home by night, and brought hither to work. While the workmen were building the huts, the woodmen cleared the spot where it was proposed to erect the saw-mill. The *ouvidor* left us, and went for

some time with many of his people to Caravellas; our company was consequently much diminished, but we soon received a large accession of numbers. Captain Bento Lourenzo * had carried the new road so far with his mineiros, that he had nearly approached our solitude. The *Picadores* (people who go before and mark upon the trees the direction which the woodmen are to pursue) arrived a day earlier, and announced the coming of their company. The following evening, the captain arrived, with eighty or ninety men, and took up his quarters with us. A great number of people were now collected within this small compass: the sounds of the guitar, the song, and the dance (*baduca*), were heard till late in the night; large fires illumined the surrounding abatis and the dark forests, and tinged with their red glare the broad surface of the *lagoa*. The length of the road from Mucuri hither is about seven or eight leagues. The mineiros had found, near Morro d'Arara, another large *lagoa*, abounding in fish, and in which there are great numbers of jacarés; they had to make a circuit round this lake, and to cross marshes, by which, and by similar obstacles, their labour

* This enterprising *mineiro*, whose name at full length was Captain Bento Lourenzo Vas de Abreu Lima, an inhabitant of Minas Novas, had recently penetrated, with twenty-two armed men, from the frontiers of Minas Geraes, along the banks of the Mucuri, to the coast. Being employed in looking for precious stones, and continually living in the woods, he formed this bold project in the true spirit of enterprise which characterises the mineiro. For several years, he caused a path to be made through the woods at his own expense; and when the work was advanced to a certain point, he undertook the journey on foot in person. They encountered great hardships, being often in want of provisions, when they could find no animals to hunt; fortunately, and perhaps for this very reason, they met with no Botucudoes. At length, after a journey of fifty days, they succeeded in reaching the coast, when the captain discovered that he had followed the course of the Mucuri, and not of the St. Matthæus, as he had intended.

had been much retarded. The various races of men whom the captain had together in his troop, gave to our train a very picturesque and original appearance. Besides us Germans and Portuguese, there were in our company, negroes, creoles, mulattoes, mamelukes, Indians of the coast, a Botocudo, a Malali, some Maconies, and Capuchoes, all soldiers from Minas Geraes."*

Five leagues to the north of the Mucuri, is the river Peruhipe, on the southern margin of which, four miles above its mouth, is the little town of Villa Viçoza, consisting of about a hundred houses, with a church and *camara*, pleasantly situated among groves of cocoa-palms, which give a new and interesting character to the landscape.† The inhabitants carry on some trade in mandioc flour, which is exported in small coasting-vessels called *lanchas*. A German ship-carpenter, who had been brought here in an English vessel which was wrecked, exercised his craft in this place, and the owners of the vessels are among the richest of the inhabitants. The river falls into the sea by two channels: before its mouth are sand banks, which render the navigation unsafe. Between this point and Caravellas, about forty miles off the coast, lie the four rocky islands of St. Barbara, commonly called the *Abrolhos* (open your eyes), the terror of navigators. Fishermen sail thither, and stay there several days and even weeks, where they catch abundance of fish and sea-turtles.

* Maximilian's Travels, pp. 224—6. The annexed plate represents Captain Lourenzo's mineiros prosecuting their work through the forest, and the author, with his party, reposing under the trees.

† From the Peruhipe southwards, to Rio, the genuine cocoa-palm is extremely rare; but, north of Vicoza, especially at Caravellas, Belmonte, Ilheos, Porto Seguro, and Bahia, it is very common, thriving best where the sand of the coast is washed by the spray of the sea. On the whole east coast, it bears the name of *Cocos de Bahia*.

Caravellas, situated on the northern margin of the river of the same name, about five miles from the sea, and ten miles north of the Peruhipe, is the most considerable town in the province. "It has straight streets, intersecting each other at right angles, among which are five or six principal streets and several smaller ones; but they are all unpaved and overgrown with grass. The houses are neatly built, but, for the most part, of one story only. The most considerable church stands in an open spot near the *casa da camara*. Caravellas carries on a brisk trade in the productions of the country, especially mandioc flour, sometimes exporting 54,000 *alquieras* of flour a year. Thirty or forty small vessels from Pernambuco, Bahia, Rio, and the other ports on the east coast, are sometimes lying here at once."* A broad arm of the Peruhipe communicates with the Caravellas, insulating the intermediate tract of coast, and affording a most agreeable passage from Viçoza. The banks are entirely covered with mangrove trees, the bark of which is of great use in tanning; and high groves of cocoa-palms frequently charm the eye. The latter part of the voyage, the channel is formed into a labyrinth by a multitude of mangrove islands, inhabited by swarms of parrots, while, on the natural arcades formed by the singular roots of the mangrove trees, are seen numbers of white herons.

After a month's stay at Caravellas, Prince Maximilian prosecuted his journey along the coast northward. To-

* Mr. Lindley says, that the river Caravellos (or of *caravels*, an ancient three-mast vessel) "has a formidable and dangerous bar, that will admit vessels of twelve feet only; but, when over the bar, they have ten fathom water. The river is two miles broad, and proportionably deep; and for six miles that it ascends to the town, its banks are beautifully interspersed with plantations. The town is bustling and populous; the buildings are somewhat superior to those of Porto Seguro, though in the same style; but the church has a mean and most miserable appearance."

wards evening, he came to a rapid stream called the Barra Velha, because "it is the old mouth of the river Alcobaça." The mouth of that river, (stated by Cazal to be fifteen miles north of Caravellas,) he reached early the next morning. Its more ancient name is the Itanihan or Itanhen. On its northern bank, not far from its mouth, stands the Villa de Alcobaça, built on a white, sandy plain. It contains about 200 houses, mostly covered with tiles, and a church of stone, with about 900 inhabitants. Here, as well as along the whole coast, some trade is carried on in mandioc-flour. The ancient forests on its banks are inhabited by Patachoes and Machacaries, who, from this place northward, visit in a peaceful manner the settlements of the Whites, and sometimes offer wax or game in exchange for necessaries. On the northern bank of this river, several leagues up the country, is the fazenda of *Ponte do Gentio* (bridge of the savages), then recently purchased by the Conde da Barca. At the time of Prince Maximilian's visit, some Indian families resided here, with six families of *Ilhores* (islanders), as the inhabitants of the Azores are called, nine Chinese, some negro slaves, and a Portuguese steward. The Chinese are some of those who were brought to Rio by the Conde de Linhares. They are charged with being too indolent to do any but extremely light work. "They live together in a small house. One of them has turned Christian, and has married an Indian woman. They have retained the customs of their country; they keep its festivals, are fond of all kinds of poultry, and are said to be not very particular in the choice of their provisions. The interior of their reed hut is extremely clean and neat; their beds, for instance, have fine white curtains, with tasteful drapery, fastened up on the sides with handsome brass hooks. These pretty beds form a strange contrast to the miserable reed hut in which they are placed. They sleep on a

fine rush mat, with a small round pillow for the head. We saw them eat their rice in the genuine Chinese fashion with two small sticks. They were much pleased at our visiting them, and talked to us, in very broken Portuguese, about their dear native country, and how much more comfortable they were there than in Brazil. They also opened their trunks, in which they carefully preserved some indifferent Chinese porcelain and a great number of fans of various kinds, which they brought with them for sale."

There are several other fazendas in this neighbourhood, on the right bank of the river; but, from the eminence which commands the village, the whole country presents the appearance of uninterrupted gloomy forests extending to the horizon.

Five leagues to the north of the Rio Alcobaca or Itanhen, the Rio do Prado or Sucurucu (written by Cazal Jucurucu) falls into the Atlantic. This river, too, has, at a short distance southward, its ancient mouth, called the *Barra Velha*. The Villa do Prado, originally a settlement of Indians, is less considerable than Alcobaca, not containing more than about sixty houses and 600 inhabitants, and is still more destitute of many necessaries. Some *lanchas*, however, keep up a little coasting trade with *farinha* (mandioc flour), a little sugar, and other produce. The river is tolerably large, and its bar can be passed by loaded *sumacas*. While detained by heavy rains in this "dreary, sandy spot," Prince Maximilian was fortunate enough to have an opportunity of seeing a company of Patacho Indians, who, as well as the Machacaries, inhabit the forests on the Sucurucu. They are thus described:—

"They entered the town stark naked, with their arms in their hands, and were immediately surrounded by a crowd of people. They brought large balls of black wax for sale, and we procured a number of bows and arrows

of them, in exchange for knives and red handkerchiefs. These savages had nothing striking in their appearance; they were neither painted, nor otherwise disfigured: some were short, most of them of the middle size, of rather slender make, with large bony faces, and coarse features. Only a few of them had handkerchiefs tied round them, which had been given them on some former occasion. Their leader, who had nothing remarkable in him, (the Portuguese called him captain,) wore a red woollen cap and blue breeches, which he had procured some where else. Food was their chief desire. Some flour and cocoa-nuts were given to them: the latter they opened very dexterously with a small axe, afterwards biting the white kernel out of the hard shell, with their strong teeth. Their eagerness in eating was remarkable. In bartering, some of them were very intelligent. They asked chiefly for knives or hatchets; but one of them immediately got a red handkerchief tied round his neck. A cocoa-nut fixed upon a pole, was set up at the distance of forty paces, and they were desired to shoot at this mark, which they never missed.

"In their external appearance, the Patachoes resemble the Puries and the Machacaries; only they are taller than the former. Like the latter, they do not disfigure their faces, and wear their hair naturally hanging about the head, only cut off in the neck and on the forehead; though some shave the whole head, leaving merely a small tuft before and behind. Some of them pierce the lower lip and the ear, and wear a small piece of reed in the little aperture. The men, like those of all the other tribes on the east coast, carry their knives fastened to a string round their necks; and they hung the rosaries which were given them, in the same manner. Their skin was of its natural red-brown colour, and no where painted. The women are

not painted, any more than the men, and go entirely naked.

"Their weapons are, in the main, the same as those of the other savages; their bows are, however, larger than those of any of the other tribes. I measured one of them, and found it to be eight feet nine inches and a half, English measure; they are made of *airi* wood (*bignonia*). The huts of these savages differ in their construction from those of the Puries. The stems of young trees and poles stuck in the ground, are bent at the top and tied together, and a covering of cocoa or pattioba leaves is laid on them. These huts are very flat and low. Near each of them is a sort of grate, consisting of four prongs stuck in the ground, on which are laid four sticks, and these are crossed by others laid pretty close, for the purpose of roasting or broiling their game.

"The Patachoes in many respects resemble the Machacaries: their languages too have some affinity, though in many points they are widely different. Both tribes are said to unite against the Botocudoes, and seem partly to treat their prisoners as slaves; for, but lately, they offered at Villa do Prado, a Botocudo girl for sale. No well-founded suspicion was ever entertained that these Patachoes eat human flesh. The moral character of all these savage tribes is, indeed, very similar in the principal features, yet, each of them has its peculiarities. Thus, the Patachoes are, of all these tribes, the most distrustful and reserved; their look is always cold and sullen; and it is very seldom that they allow their children to be brought up among the whites, as the other tribes readily do."

The coast, on leaving Prado, assumes a different aspect. High cliffs of clay form the coast, resting on a ferruginous sand-stone, the summits covered with wood, with numerous valleys of dark green, gloomy forests, each with its little

stream, opening to the sea. On all the rocks along this coast, there are shell-fish which afford a purple juice; the same species, apparently, that is described by Mr. Mawe as found in the bay of Dos Ganchos.* In some of the valleys are fazendas belonging to different planters. To the north of the point of land called Comechatiba or Curubichatiba,† a day's distance from Prado, the sea is again bordered by high cliffs and rocks, and the road makes a circuit over the heights. A league and a half from Comechatiba, is the little river Cahy, which cannot be passed, however, except at ebb tide: at high water, it is rapid and rough. It flows, like all these rivers, from a dark, woody valley. Between three and four leagues further northward is the mouth of the Corumbao,‡ somewhat larger than the Cahy. At the *barra* are several sandy islands, the haunt of herons and other water-fowl. A league and a half further, the river Cramemoan falls into the sea, on the south bank of which is the little Indian village of the same name, now a military post, called the Quartel da Cunha. In the foreground of the mountains which skirt the open country on the left, is seen the circular white head of the *Morro de Pascoal*, which serves as a land-mark to mariners: it is a part of the Serra dos Aymores. The road again leaves the beach soon after passing the Cramemoan, and ascends, by a steep path, to a dry, elevated *campo*, called Juassema, the site of a large town founded by one of the Dukes d'Aveiro, and destroyed by the Aymores. It is said, that pieces of bricks, metals,

* See vol. i. p. 273.

† "The sea forms at this place a good harbour, which is protected, not, indeed, against the winds, but against the sea, by a reef of rocks, and has good anchorage."

‡ The mouth of the Corumbao, Prince Maximilian states, is said to be in lat. 17° south; but, in his map, it is placed in 16° 36 south.

and similar articles are still found here;—"the oldest memorials," remarks Prince Maximilian, "of the history of Brazil, for no monuments are met with on this coast more ancient than the time of the first settlement of the Europeans. Its rude inhabitants did not, like the Tultekian and Azteckian nations in Mexico and Peru, leave monuments to engage the attention of posterity after the lapse of thousands of years. The memory of the rude Tapuya disappears from the earth with his naked body, which his brethren consign to the grave; and it is indifferent to future generations, whether a Botucudo or a wild beast of the desert formerly lived on any particular spot."

The next river is the Rio do Frade (friar's river), a small stream which received this name because a Franciscan missionary was drowned in it. Cazal makes its *barra* eight miles north of the Cramemoan. Canoes can proceed two days' journey up the stream, the banks of which are fertile. Monte de Pascoal is seen at a distance of twelve leagues to the west. On the northern bank of this river is the *destacamente* (military station) of Linhares, consisting of a few Indian families, who are, however, no soldiers. Three leagues further is the Indian villa of Trancozo, at the mouth of a rivulet of the same name, formerly called Itapitinga (son of the stones), probably because it issues from stony mountains. Here, what was formerly a convent of Jesuits, is now a church. The town contained, in 1813, about 50 houses and 500 inhabitants, almost all Indians of a dark-brown complexion. The travellers found most of the houses empty, the inhabitants living chiefly on their plantations, and merely coming to the church on holidays. They cultivate mandioc and cotton, and some are fishermen. The bay of Trancozo is described by Mr. Lindley as small and shallow, and the country, he says, is delightful. The distant forests are

inhabited by Patachoes.* From this place it is about fifteen miles to Porto Seguro, the capital of the district. Between Trancozo and Porto Seguro, (about three miles south of the latter,) is a steep *morro* crowned with the chapel of *Nossa Senhora d'Ajuda* (our lady of aid),† near which formerly stood the town of St. Amaro. The white walls of the chapel form an excellent sea-mark, and the prospect from this eminence is exceedingly grand. The Virgin, its patroness, is particularly invoked by the neighbouring coasting vessels and fishing smacks, in cases of distress or contrary winds, to which circumstance her title seems to allude. "Her fame even extends," adds Mr. Lindley, "to curing several disorders. The inside of the building is decorated with rude drawings of vessels in distress, and of sick chambers, having inscriptions under each of the different cases which they are intended to commemorate."

The town of Porto Seguro, situated at the mouth of the river Buranhem, though it ranks as the first in the province, is less considerable than Caravellas, containing not more than 420 houses and about 2600 inhabitants. The principal part is small, and consists of a few unpaved streets, overgrown with grass, with houses for the most part of only one story, built of soft bricks and plastered over. They all appeared to Mr. Lindley "dirty and wretched." About half a dozen are of two stories, among

* "From the Rio do Frade to Villa Prado," says this traveller, "is a long range of neglected coast, intersected by several smaller rivers, and frequented by such numbers of hostile Indians, that travelling on the beach is extremely dangerous." This was in 1802; but, in 1816, the people were on such friendly terms with the Patachoes, that they no longer feared them. "The whole coast," Mr. Lindley adds, "is a continuation of reefs, sunken rocks, and shallows; yet, the neighbouring pilots conduct vessels so skilfully through, that few accidents are known."

† Mr. Lindley calls her by mistake, Nossa Senhora de Judea, and de Juda.

which are a quadrangular town-house with a prison of some extent, and the governor's house, formerly the Jesuits' convent. The church is plain, but has glass windows, and is by far the best erected building in the place. The materials, Mr. Lindley says, as well as those of another chapel which was building at the time of his detention here, were supplied by the original church and a ruined Franciscan monastery which were erected at the establishment of the town in 1550. This upper part of the town lies on an elevated ridge; but the larger portion of the inhabitants have removed from the eminence to another quarter called *Os Marcos*, situated on the declivity nearer the river, and consequently more advantageously for trade. Here reside the owners of the vessels engaged in the trade of Porto Seguro, who are the most opulent of the inhabitants: their low houses are irregularly scattered amid groves of orange and banana trees. The third part of the town, called *Potinha* or *Ponta d'Area*, lies close to the mouth of the river, and, excepting some vendas, contains only some low, scattered houses, inhabited by fishermen and mariners, and shaded by cocoa-palms. "The upper town," says Prince Maximilian, "is generally very desolate and dead: many houses are even shut up and dilapidated; for it is only on Sundays and holidays that people meet in this upper part; but it is then rendered very lively by the number of well-dressed persons. People who go almost naked during the week, appear dressed in the neatest manner on Sunday. We must, indeed, do the Brazilians of all classes the justice to say, that cleanliness and neatness in dress are general among them."*

* The former part of this statement is in accordance with Mr. Lindley's account of their usual costume; he had no opportunity, probably, of seeing the inhabitants *dressed*. "The very dress of the men, particularly in the morning, is shocking to a person of the commonest delicacy. They promenade the prison" (in which the

The port which has given name both to the town and the province, is formed, Mr. Lindley states, by a reef, or rather ledge of rocks, that runs out for about a mile, from an extended point of the main, in a direction parallel to the land, presenting a natural mole. "These rocks are dry at low water, and terminate abruptly, appearing again faintly at half a mile's distance. The space between is the bar or entrance, over which is twenty feet water at high tides, but inside, it shallows to twelve feet. The last is the average water of the port, except at some distance up, where the river empties itself, and the water is somewhat deeper. The bottom is a fine sand, gradually ascending to a broad beach. In entering the port, the view of the country is delightful. Near the water's edge is a range of fishermen's cottages, shaded with the waving cocoa in front, and each having its adjoining orange-ground. On the back of these cots, the native underwood intrudes, and, intersected into numberless paths, forms evergreen groves full of birds of rich plumage, and some of song. To the northward, the land rises to a steep hill, which is ascended by a winding path, and on its summit stands the (upper) town . . . . . The principal inhabitants have each their country farm, situated chiefly on the banks of the river, and ranging five leagues from its mouth up to Villa Verde. At these they have plantations of the sugar-cane and mandioc." There is, however, but little agriculture, and

writer was immured) "in a thin pair of calico drawers that scarcely reach the knee, with the shirt loose over them, and no stockings or hat. In cool or rainy weather, they have sometimes the addition of a cloak, or bed-gown loosely wrapped round them." The neighbouring Patachoes, however, would offend a person of delicacy still more, as they wear no clothing whatever. "Happily," says Mr. Lindley in another place, speaking of the poorer inhabitants of Porto Segnro, "they live in a beautiful climate, where no extremes of heat or cold distress the human frame, and where they can exist almost without clothing."

the greater part of the farinha consumed, comes from Santa Cruz. This, with salt fish, constitutes the chief subsistence of the population; a circumstance to which Prince Maximilian attributes the prevalence of scurvy. Fresh fish, though abundant on the coast, are dear and scarce, owing to the indolence of the inhabitants. The only meat is beef, a beast being killed every Sunday: not a goat or a sheep, and scarcely a swine is to be seen. The fishing-vessels generally remain from four to six weeks at sea, and return with cargoes of salted fish, chiefly the *garupa* and the *mero*, a large quantity of which is sent to Bahia and other ports, bringing a considerable profit. There belong to the port about forty of the little two-masted vessels called *lanchas*, which sail with great swiftness, even when the wind is not favourable. The main-mast has a broad, square sail; the mizen-mast, which is shorter, has a small triangular one; and they can be set in such a manner, that the vessel runs as close as possible to the wind when others cannot sail at all. Porto Seguro is stated by Mr. Lindley to be in lat. 16° 40′ south, long. 40° 12′ west.

Several small rivers join the Porto Seguro or Buranhem, which is also called the Rio da Cachoeira, in consequence of a fall: among these is the Patatiba, which gave its former name to the Indian village of Villa Verde, situated about fifteen miles above the capital, on the southern banks of the Buranhem, near a large lake. Here is a church belonging to a ruined Jesuits' convent: the priest (a *padre vicario*) who resides here, is the only white, except a sort of town-clerk or notary. The villa has from forty to sixty houses, and about 500 inhabitants, who export farinha and some planks. A little further up, is the station of Aguiar, where there are six Indian families. The soil is said to be of great fertility, but is entirely left to the indolence of the Christianised Indians. How little

progress has been made in civilising the country in this direction, may be inferred from the fact mentioned by Cazal, that the source of the Buranhem is unknown. As the stream is not considerable, its course is, probably, not extensive. The portion of it which has been explored, flows, with many windings, from the south-west to the north-east. It abounds with various sorts of fish. From the confluence of the Patatiba, to its mouth, it is sometimes called *Ambas as Agoas* (two-waters).

Above five leagues (nearly eighteen miles) north of Porto Seguro, the Santa Cruz falls into the sea. It is rather narrower than the Buranhem, but, like the latter, has a good and secure *barra*, protected by a projecting reef of rocks against the violence of the sea. Its first name was the Joam de Tyba. The town of Santa Cruz lies near the mouth, on the south bank: the church and part of the town stand on an eminence; the other part, consisting of low houses, scattered in thickets of orange and banana trees, is situated at the foot of the hill.

This, as has been already mentioned, is the most ancient settlement in Brazil. Near this place, Cabral landed on the 3d of May 1500; and here Tourinho, the first donatory, established his capital, giving it nearly the same name as Cabral had bestowed on the country.* The site where the town had been begun, was probably near the mouth of the small river Mutari, which falls into Cabralia Bay, nearly opposite to the island called Coroa Vermelha;† but its "shallow, sandy mouth"

* See vol. i. p. 7.

† It is not a little singular, that neither Cabralia Bay, nor this island, is mentioned by Prince Maximilian, although laid down in his map. On the other hand, Cazal takes no notice of the river Mutari, or of the Coroa Vermelha. Mr. Lindley evidently speaks of Cabralia Bay under the name of the island. "The harbour" (of Santa Cruz), he says, "admits vessels of twelve feet, and the

affords no entrance to vessels of any considerable burthen; and it seems doubtful whether the Porto Seguro of Cabral was, properly speaking, a port, or only a good anchorage in the bay under shelter of the island.

Santa Cruz is in all respects less considerable than Porto Seguro, notwithstanding that more attention is paid to agriculture here, and some farinha is exported to various parts of the coast. It is said to have been formerly much more flourishing, but has long been sinking into decay. The river rises at the distance of but a few days' journey, and its two sources are stated to be not far from the course of the Rio Grande de Belmonte. On the upper part of the Santa Cruz, Botucudoes rove about; but, nearer to the coast, this river forms their boundary, the territory to the southward belonging to the Patachoes and Machacaries. To check the inroads of the savages, a station has recently been established at some distance up the river, called Aveiro.

At a short distance from the river, on the northern bank, the small village (*povoaçao*) of St. André is picturesquely scattered amid groves of cocoa-trees. From this place, a fine beach, "as level as a threshing-floor," extends to the river Mogiquiçaba (or Misquiçaba), a distance of several leagues. Prince Maximilian mentions, as occurring in his day's journey from St. André, the little river St. Antonio, (which is formidable, however, at flood-tide,) and beyond this, a little village on a small rivulet, called Barra de Guayu. The Mogiquiçaba is less considerable than the Santa Cruz. Near its mouth

Coroa Vermeil, *immediate'y adjoining to the southward*, ships of any burthen." Mr. Henderson speaks of Cabralia Bay, as "the only port of the province where large vessels can enter." To the south of the Mutari, is another small river, called the Rio das Mangues. At low water, they are both quite insignificant, but, at flood-tide, they are impassable.

is a fazenda belonging to the *ouvidor* of the district, and a few individuals have settled a little above it; but thick forests cover the country on either side far and near, the haunt of the savages. "At this place," Prince Maximilian states, "is the entrance to the road which has been made on the Belmonte up to Minas; but it is still very incomplete, and part of it not passable." A plain, five leagues wide, extends northward from the Mogiquiçaba to the Belmonte. About half way is the *Barra Velha*, where an arm of the river, now dry, once discharged itself into the sea. The Rio Grande de Belmonte, (so called to distinguish it from the other rivers of the same name,) runs close by the town of Belmonte, and falls into the sea in latitude 15° 40′ south. It acquires that name after the junction of its two principal branches, the Arassuahy and the Jequitinhonha.* At high-water, this large river is rapid, but its entrance is always bad and dangerous, being encumbered with sand-banks which, even at high-water, render the navigation formidable to the *lanchas*.

The villa de Belmonte was originally an aldeia of Christianised Indians, who were settled here not above sixty or seventy years ago. Few of them are now left, and the town is described by Prince Maximilian as a small, mean-looking place, which is going rapidly to decay. "The town-house, built of wood and clay, was nearly falling down: one wall was entirely gone, so that the interior was completely exposed to view. The town forms a square of about sixty houses with nearly 600 inhabitants. At one end stands the church. The dwelling-houses are low clay huts, for the most part covered with straw, and the irregular, unpaved streets are overgrown with grass. Its only ornament is the number

* See p. 101 of this volume.

of cocoa-palms in this sandy plain, which every where surround the habitations, and unite their lofty summits into a waving grove. This poor little town has derived some advantage from the communication which has been opened upon and along the river to Minas Novas; but still, the place had scarcely a sufficiency of the necessaries of life."

The road to Minas, though cleared, was very far from being in good order, being intersected by numerous deep clefts and ravines, over which no bridge had as yet been thrown. The communication is kept up much more easily by canoes, several of which annually come down the river with produce, and take back in return salt and other commodities. It requires about twenty days to reach the first inhabited parts of Minas. To protect this communication against the savages, six military posts have been established at different stations; the quartels *dos Arcos*, *do Salto*, *do Estreito*, *da Vigia*, *de S. Miguel*, and of *Tucaihos de Lorena*. Prince Maximilian, anxious to become acquainted with the Botucudoes who inhabit the forests on its banks, ascended the river as far as the second quartel, a three days' journey, and remained for some time in this neighbourhood. We shall avail ourselves of the information he obtained in this excursion, relative to the character and habits of this tribe of the aborigines.

THE BOTUCUDOES.

THERE appears to be no doubt that the singular and ferocious tribe to whom the Portuguese gave the name of Botucudoes, are the remains of the once formidable Aymores, who, up to the early part of the eighteenth century, had not ceased to annoy the settlers on this part of the coast. In the year 1758, they suddenly appeared

in great strength, and made cruel havoc among the Portuguese, till driven back by the aid of the Coroado Indians.* The very name of Aymores or Botucudoes still inspires the colonists with sentiments of horror and apprehension, as these savages have the character, generally, of cannibals. The name Botucudo was given them by the Portuguese on account of the large pieces of wood which they wear inserted in each ear and the under lip.† They call themselves *Engerekmoung*, and are much displeased at being spoken of by their nickname. The first Botucudoes that Prince Maximilian saw, which was at Viçoza, astonished him, he says, beyond all expression. "We had never before seen such strange and singularly ugly beings. The lower lip was made by the *botoque* to project very much, and the ears of some of them hung, like large wings, down to their shoulders. Their brown bodies were covered with dirt." One of their leaders wore plugs of this description four inches in diameter; and in the skull of a young Botucudo, which his highness was so fortunate as to obtain for Professor Blumenbach, the wood had not only pushed the lower foreteeth out of their places, but had even pressed together and effaced the sockets of the teeth. The women wear the *botoque* as well as the men, but theirs are generally smaller, and Prince Maximilian adds, *more elegant*. A recent female traveller gives the following description of a party of Botucudoes who came to Praya Grande in the Bay of Rio, "on a visit," during her residence in the capital. "We saw about six men, and ten women, with some young

* Southey's Brazil, vol. iii. p. 600.

† *Botoque*, Prince Maximilian says, signifies in Portuguese the bung of a barrel. Vieyra's Dictionary gives as the meaning of the word, "a pierced stone worn by the Indians." Mr. Luccock (*Notes*, p. 301) assigns, but evidently on conjecture, a different derivation. The savages call the lip-plug *gnimato*, that of the ears *houma*.

children. The faces were rather square, with very high cheek bones, and low, contracted foreheads. Some of the young women were really pretty, of a light copper colour, which glows all over when they blush; and two of the young men were decidedly handsome, with very dark eyes, (the usual colour of the eyes is hazel,) and aquiline noses; the rest were so disfigured by the holes cut in their lower lips and their ears to receive their barbarous ornaments, that we could scarcely tell what they were like. I had understood that the privilege of thus beautifying the face was reserved for the men, but the women of this party were equally disfigured. We purchased from one of the men a mouth-piece, measuring an inch and a half in diameter. The ornaments used by these people are pieces of wood perfectly circular, which are inserted into the slit of the lip or ear, like a button, and are extremely frightful, especially when they are eating. It gives the mouth the appearance of an ape's; and the peculiar mumping it occasions, is so hideously unnatural, that it gives credit to, if it did not originally suggest, the stories of their cannibalism. The mouth is still more ugly without the lip-piece, the teeth appearing, and saliva running through."*

These Botucudoes had submitted to be clothed, the men in a shirt and trowsers, the women in cotton frocks; but their garments seemed to sit uneasily on them. In their native woods, they go entirely naked; and the annexed plate represents them as they appeared to Prince Maximilian in his excursion up the Belmonte. "Naked and brown like the beasts of the forest," he says, "they stood with their great plugs of white wood in their ears

* Mrs. Graham's *Voyage to Brazil*, pp. 294. 5. This lady's doubt respecting their cannibalism could proceed only from want of information, as the fact is established on the clearest evidence.

and lower lips, and their bows and arrows in their hands." The men were of the middle size, strong, muscular, and well made, yet, in general, slender. They wore their hair cropped close, except a round tuft on the crown of the head. This was the case even with the young children, a considerable number of whom the mothers carried on their shoulders, or led by the hand.

The Botucudoes of the Belmonte, unlike those of the River Doce, who manifest an irreconcileable hostility to the whites, were at this time on the most amicable terms with the inhabitants. So little were they feared, that individuals had even ventured to go several days' journey with them into the great woods to hunt, and to sleep with them in their huts. "Such experiments, however," he adds, "are not yet very frequent, as the distrust entertained of them cannot easily be quite overcome." These persons always returned from such excursions quite exhausted with the fatigue of keeping up with the Botucudoes, whose superior muscular strength enables them to go very swiftly in the hottest weather, both up and down hill. "They penetrate the thickest and most entangled forests; they wade or swim through every river, if it be not too rapid; perfectly naked, therefore not incommoded by clothing, never getting into perspiration, carrying only their bow and arrows in their hand, they stoop with facility, and, with their hardened skin, which fears neither thorns nor other injury, they creep through the smallest gap in the bushes, and can thus pass over a great extent of ground in a day."

In a physiological respect, the Botucudoes seem to have the advantage over many of the South American tribes. They are represented to be better made and handsomer than the other Tapuyas, of middle stature, sometimes tall, robust, and well-proportioned, with well-shaped hands and feet. Like the other Indian tribes,

they have strongly marked features, generally high cheek-bones, and small eyes, the nose short with wide nostrils, and lips rather thick. The receding inclination of the facial line is not, Prince Maximilian says, a very certain characteristic of this tribe. Their colour is a reddish-brown, more or less clear, sometimes varying to yellow. A few individuals, it is affirmed, are almost completely white, with a reddish tinge on the cheeks; and it is given as a current statement, that some have been known to have blue eyes. It seems more probable, that these supposed Botucudoes were either mamalucoes or European captives who had grown up among them. They have strong, jet-black, shining hair. Many eradicate their eye-brows and beard; others let them grow, or merely clip them; but the women do not suffer a hair to remain on their body. Their teeth are fine and white. All the Botucudoes shave the back of their head up to about three inches above the ears, so as to leave only a little tuft on the top, by which they are distinguished from all their countrymen on the eastern coast.* With tribes who discard all clothing, the hair becomes important as one of the few modes of foppery and badges of distinction that are left. Thus, the Coroadoes are known by their shaven crowns, other tribes by their suffering the hair to grow, the Botucudoes by their tufts. The razor they make use of, is made of cane (*taguara*) sharpened to an edge almost as keen as steel. The American tribes have been stated to be beardless. This, Prince Maximilian says, is quite incorrect. A few Botucudoes are to be seen with tolerably strong beards, but the greater part have only a circle of thin-sown hair round the mouth.

With regard to the horrible mutilation of the counte-

* This is mentioned by Southey as distinguishing the Aymores. See vol. i. p. 295.

nance by the *botoque*, it appears to be not peculiar to these Indians, though they seem to excel in the pitch of deformity to which they have carried it. Prince Maximilian made particular inquiry respecting the origin of this custom, and we shall give the substance of his observations.

The age at which this operation is performed on the child, varies at the pleasure of the parent, but it is in general when he is seven or eight years old; sometimes earlier. For this purpose, the lobes of the ears and the lower lip are stretched; the holes are then made with a sharp-pointed stick or skewer, and very small pieces of wood are at first inserted, which afterwards give place to larger and larger till the desired elongation is perfected. The wood used is that of the barrigudo or wool-tree (bombax ventricosa,) which is lighter than cork, and, when carefully dried before the fire, becomes very white. Extremely light, however, as these plugs are, they weigh down the lip in old persons: in younger ones, they give it a horizontal direction, or a little raised, the lip itself appearing only like a thin ring encircling the botoque. These plugs may be removed at pleasure: the lip then falls, and shews the lower teeth through the hole. The constant pressure and friction of the *botoque*, however, soon displaces the teeth of the under-jaw, and between twenty and thirty, the Botucudo has frequently none to shew. Their national ornament is, moreover, extremely troublesome at meals, and renders the operation of eating, a spectacle not a little disgusting.

This frightful practice appears extraordinary, we are informed, even to the other Tapuyas* of the eastern coast.

* Vasconcellos ranks the Aymores among the Tapuyas, a denomination which he applies loosely to all the wild Indians, in contradistinction to those who spoke the Tupi tongue. Mr. Southey thinks that the Aymores are erroneously classed among the Tapuyas, who

The Malalies, who live under the protection of the quartel of Passanha on the upper part of the Rio Doce, call the Botucudoes *Epcoseck*, great-ears. Yet, the custom of piercing the lower lip prevails among several of the American tribes. Southey, on the authority of Vasconcellos, mentions it as the practice of the Tapuyas of the Maranham, but says, that it was the privilege of the male sex to be thus beautified. "Their ears were bored, and the under lip cut through longitudinally to form a supplementary mouth, when they were boys. When this operation was to be performed, the boys were led to a place where all the people were assembled to witness it, dancing and singing as at a religious ceremony. One conjurer laid the patient on the ground, and tied his hands and feet; and another made the incision with a wooden instrument, the mother meantime weeping aloud. The cheeks were not bored till the youth was about to marry."* Prince Maximilian states, (we know not on what authority,) that the Tupinambas of the coast wore a green stone in the under lip; and Azara informs us, he adds, that a similar usage prevailed among the savages of Paraguay. Condamine saw on the banks of the Maranham, savages who

are stated to be the oldest race in Brazil, and to have possessed the whole coast from the Orellana to the Plata, till driven back by the Tupies. A Portuguese writer assigns the Gram Para and the Jaguaribe as their limits. The Aymores, on the contrary, first appeared in the southern provinces, and, Mr. Southey thinks, came from the south. "Of this," he adds, "their stature is some presumption, and their complexion, proof; and they spoke a language which had never before been heard in Brazil."—*History of Brazil*, vol. i. p. 400. The word *Tapuya* is of uncertain derivation: it is said to signify "the enemies;" but if it be correct, as stated by Vasconcellos, that this name is given by the savages themselves to their booths or hovels, the denomination was probably at first intended to denote those tribes who lived in such habitations, and the word has acquired its secondary meaning from the ferocious or formidable character of the Tapuyas.

* Southey, vol. i. p. 403.

had the lobes of the ear stretched to a prodigious length, till they hung on the shoulders. As their grand ornament, he says, they fill the holes with either a large nosegay or a tuft of grass and flowers, which serves them for a pendant. But it is not the ear-plug or ear-jewel that is so extraordinary. Lieutenant Kotzebue describes some of the islanders of the Pacific Archipelago, who had ear-holes measuring more than three inches in diameter, in which was worn a roll of green leaves or of tortoise-shell.* Captain Cook had previously made a similiar statement with regard to the natives of Easter Island. One traveller goes so far as to affirm, that he saw on the banks of the Apure, a tribe who had succeeded in stretching their ears till they served as pockets: and according to another, the savages of Guiana carry in the large and convenient apertures they have made in the lobes of their ears, their pins and needles.† Ear-rings or pendants in the ear, however, of some description or another, have been worn by almost all nations, civilised or uncivilised, from the remotest times; nor is there any thing much more unnatural in the ear-nosegay of the Amazonian belle, or the tortoise-shell pendant of the ladies of Easter Island, than in the jewelry which weighs down the delicate ears of a European beauty. But the *botoque* is an outrage upon nature, for which it seems difficult to account, as it is a positive and perpetual inconvenience. The bone-rings worn in the under-lip by the inhabitants of Prince William's Sound and of the Aleutian islands, bears some resemblance to the *botoque*, but still materially differs from it. At all events, although the custom of piercing the ears and the under-lip appears to be common to many savage nations in various parts, this mode of disfiguration is carried in South America to the

* Kotzebue's *Voyage of Discovery*, vol. iii.

† *Voyage de Quandt*, cited by Prince Maximilian.

greatest length, and, of all the South American tribes, the Botucudoes seem to have brought the art to the highest perfection. The only question is, whether it can have been adopted simply as an ornament? It does not appear that the ceremony of perforation is considered as a religious rite, nor is any value attached to the *botoque* itself by the wearer, as several were readily induced to sell theirs to Prince Maximilian. Possibly, they are considered as a distinguishing badge of the tribe, and on this account it may be a point of honour to wear them. Can it have any connexion with a practice mentioned by an early traveller as observed by the Tapuyas, that of carrying a tobacco leaf between the under lip and the teeth?* Utility, real or supposed, is generally the origin of customs the most unnatural; but the effect often outlasts the cause, and the custom degenerates into greater extravagance, till its design is wholly lost.

The other ornaments of the Botucudoes are, necklaces made of hard berries or the teeth of animals, which are worn chiefly by the women, and diadems or bunches of feathers, which sometimes distinguish their chiefs. They also occasionally paint their bodies black and their faces red: it is not stated whether this is their full dress or their military costume, but it heightens the *farouche* effect of their appearance. Round the neck every Botucudo

* "When they travel through the wilderness, says Knivett (Purchas, l. vi. c. 7.), they do carry great store of tobacco with them; and continually they have a leaf laid along their mouth, between the lip and the teeth; and as they go, the same runneth out of the hole that they have in their lips." Southey, vol. i. p. 403. The *botoque* had been, it would seem, in this case, laid aside. The tobacco-leaf was evidently designed to enable the traveller to sustain the privations of a long journey, by its stimulating the salivary glands, and so allaying hunger. The artificial extension of the under lip might be intended originally to accommodate a larger quantity of the narcotic herb. Having no pockets, they could not carry a tobacco-box.

wears, attached to a strong cord, his most precious jewel, a knife. Unlike the indigenous tribes of Peru and Mexico, they appear to have no notion of any ornamental arts or manufactures. Indolence is a predominant trait in their character, notwithstanding that they are capable of so extraordinary a degree of physical exertion; but their indolence does not degenerate into torpor, for, adds Prince Maximilian, "they are gay, facetious, and ready to converse." Their huts and utensils resemble those of the Puries, except that the Botucudoes differ from them, as well as from the greater part of the South American tribes, in not sleeping in nets or hammocks, but on the ground, the bark of trees supplying them with a rude bed. They have no canoes, nor any notion of navigation; but Southey is mistaken in representing that they cannot swim.

The language of the Botucudoes differs considerably from the dialects of all the neighbouring tribes. The nasal sound is very common, but they have no gutturals. They count by their fingers and ears, but have few numerals. In a moral respect, they would seem to be by no means the most degraded of the Brazilian tribes. Prince Maximilian affirms, that they are not unsusceptible of fidelity, of attachment, and of gratitude. The women are fond of their children while young, and rear them with great care. The crimes of abortion and infanticide, ascribed by Azara to the Guanas and Mbayas, are unknown among the Botucudoes. Nor are they destitute of compassion for orphans and the aged. "At the quartel dos Arcos, a youth of this tribe has been seen conducting his old blind father with the most careful attention. One of their chiefs displayed very lively emotions of joy on the return of a son of eighteen years, who had resided for some time among the Portuguese: he pressed him to his bosom, and even shed tears." Prince Maximilian describes as a very interesting scene, the reception which the Botucudoes of

the quartel gave to their countrymen and relations who had been with the *ouvidor* to Rio. As they came in successively, they were welcomed with the greatest cordiality: old Captain June, a Botucudo chief, sang a joyful song, if singing it might be called; and "some even affirmed that they saw him shed tears of joy."

Notwithstanding these good qualities, there is no room for hesitation in ranking the Botucudoes among the *anthropophagi* of South America. Prince Maximilian was disposed to be sceptical on this point, and he suggests, that possibly the resemblance of their favourite food, the ape, to the human form, may have given rise, in some cases, to an unfounded suspicion of cannibal practices. He admits, however, that they cannot be cleared from the charge of now and then treating themselves with the flesh of an enemy. Moreover, they are said to look upon the negroes as a sort of ape, and to call them by this name; they may, therefore, not consider the cooking and eating of a negro as cannibalism, any more than a West Indian planter considers the killing of one as murder. But the evidence adduced by Mr. Southey places the repulsive fact beyond all doubt. Some of the almost incredible stories related by the early voyagers* may be chargeable with circumstantial exaggeration; but the existence of the practice is established by the concurrent testimony of all travellers who have had any opportunity of observation. "When we questioned the Botucudoes of Belmonte respecting this horrible usage," says Prince Maximilian, "they always answered, that it did not prevail among

* See in particular the narrative of Hans Stade, who was made prisoner by the Tupinambas, (Southey's Brazil, vol. i. ch. 7, 8.) and the anecdotes cited in vol. i. pp. 9, 13, 20. The Tupi tribes having all been civilised by the Jesuits, the reproach of cannibalism, Prince Maximilian says, now applies only to some tribes of Tapuyas; in particular, the Botucudoes and the Puries.

them, but they owned that many of their countrymen still practised it. Moreover, all my doubts on this point were removed by Quêck, the young Botucudo whom I had brought with me. He had for a long time hesitated to confess the truth ; but he assented at last when I told him, that I knew that his horde at Belmonte had for a long time relinquished the usage." This youth then related an instance in which a Botucudo chieftain having captured a Patacho, the whole horde had feasted on the prisoner ; and he mentioned another well-known Botucudo who had killed a Patacho, and eaten him. " His narrative," adds his Highness, " may be the more safely relied upon, inasmuch as it was with difficulty extorted from him." But it seems that the practice is going out of fashion, as it is held infamous by all the tribes who have made any approach to civilisation.

The religious ideas of such a people must of necessity be of the grossest kind : what they are, is but imperfectly known. They believe in malignant demons great and small, who are distinguished as *Jantchong Gipakiou* and *Jantchong Coudgi*. The fear of a great demon renders them unwilling to pass the night in the forests alone, for which reason they prefer marching in companies. They hold the moon in high veneration, attributing to her influence the chief phenomena in nature ; in particular, thunder and lightning. Like the greater part of mankind, they have a tradition of a general deluge. When a Botucudo dies, he is interred in his hut, or near it, and the spot is then abandoned. The hands of the corpse are tied, and the body laid out at full length. Neither arms nor provisions are interred with it ; from which it would seem, that they have no distinct idea of a future state such as the Indians of North America contemplate ; but, for some time, a fire is kept burning at each corner of the grave, to scare away the evil spirits. The Tupinambas

also tied together the hands and the feet of their dead, but they placed the corpse in an erect posture. Whether this precaution was meant to prevent their getting out of the grave, and doing further mischief, does not appear.

We now enter on

THE PROVINCE OF BAHIA.

This important province, which includes the old captaincy *dos Ilheos*, extends from the Belmonte, in latitude 15° 25′ south, to the Rio Real, which divides it from Seregipe d'el Rey, in latitude 11° 38′ south,* being nearly 300 miles in length. On the west and north-west, it is separated by the river St. Francisco from Pernambuco, while, on the south-west, it touches on Minas Geraes. It is divided into three comarcas,—Bahia, Ilheos, and Jacobina, the former two comprising the coast, and the latter the western part of the province.

The comarca of the Ilheos begins at Belmonte, and extends northward to the river Jiquirica. Prince Maximilian makes the Rio Pardo or Patybe, the limit between Porto Seguro and this comarca. That river, which has its source in Serro Frio, falls into the sea by three branches. The most southern of these, called by the Indians *Imbuca*, has its mouth at Canavieras, a considerable aldeia, about fifteen miles north of Belmonte, situated on a large island formed by the river. The inhabitants of this place are for the most part whites and *pardos*, i. e. mestizoes, who form, along this line of coast, the bulk of the population. As there is neither judge nor governor, nor any kind of police in the place, Canavieras is noted throughout the country for the freedom,

* Cazal states, that the province extends from 10° south latitude to 16° south latitude; but we have followed Prince Maximilian and Mr. Lindley.

not to say wild state of the inhabitants. They bear a jovial character, and say that they are able to govern themselves. An arm of the Rio Pardo, at some distance above Canavieras, communicates with the Belmonte, under the name of the Rio da Salsa. Cazal mentions a second channel which connects the two rivers, called the Jundiahy.* The banks of the Pardo are inhabited by Botucudoes and Patachoes; but the former are not found further northward. Two leagues from the *barra* of Canaveiras is that of Patype, so named from a *povoaçao*, or hamlet, situated on the island formed by two branches of the river; and a league and a half further, is a third embouchure, called *Barra de Poxim*. At a short distance inland, a long salt-water lake runs in a direction parallel to the coast. Travellers in general embark in canoes at Canavieras, and for some days proceed, with a few interruptions, by water. The lake abounds with fish, and rises and falls with the sea. About ten miles beyond the Poxim, is the small river Commandatuba: a few Indian families have built their huts near its mouth. Three leagues (Cazal says fifteen miles) further, the traveller arrives at the Una, a somewhat larger stream, navigable by canoes thirteen miles from the sea, into which it falls by two channels, called the Rio de Muruim and

* It is difficult to reconcile Prince Maximilian's description o this part of the coast with Mr. Henderson's statements, taken from Cazal, and sometimes with his Highness's own map. Mr. Henderson makes the mouth of the Patype ten miles only north of the Belmonte, and the Poxim ten miles north of the Patype. He makes no mention of Canavieras, or of the *povoacao* of Patype under that name, but refers, probably, to the latter when he says: "In a peninsula formed by the river Patype, near its mouth, is the large parish of St. Boaventura." The Rio da Salsa, he speaks of as a distinct river, which, about twenty-eight miles from the sea, divides its waters between the Patype and the Belmonte; and about five miles from the Salsa, he places the deep circular lake of Antimucuy.

the Rio de Cachoeira. Six leagues to the north of this river, and nine miles south of Ilheos, is the large and populous Indian village of Olivença, founded by the Jesuits above a hundred years ago: it contained, in 1817, about a hundred and eighty *hearths*, and, including the district, nearly one hundred inhabitants. Prince Maximilian saw here, among several other hale old Indians, one old man who remembered having seen the foundation of the town and the erection of the church, a hundred and seven years before. His hair was still as black as ebony,—a circumstance not uncommon among the old Indians. The inhabitants are poor and indolent; they cultivate the necessaries of life, and weave their own clothing, which consists of light cottons; but their chief occupation is turning rosaries, made from the cocoa-nut (*cocos de Piassaba*), or of tortoise-shell. They are sent to Bahia, and the sale of these beads forms their only branch of trade. Strange to say, though Indians, they never employ themselves in hunting, having neither powder nor ball. The town is delightfully and salubriously situated on the side of a small eminence, between the mouths of two small streams.

The route to Ilheos lies, at ebb-tide, along the smooth, sandy beach for three leagues. "After having doubled a point of land," says Prince Maximilian, "we were agreeably surprised by the unexpected appearance of the pretty little port of Ilheos. The river of that name falls into the sea, after having turned to the south between rocky and picturesque hills, surmounted with cocoa-palms. Before the mouth of this river are seen some little rocky islets, from which the canton has taken the name of Ilheos.* A point of land closes this port on each side: on the northern point, between the river and the coast, is

* According to Mr. Henderson, they are four in number. "Three are very rocky; the other is robed in verdant woods."

situated the Villa dos Ilheos, or of St. George. The river here forms a beautiful basin, tranquil and well sheltered; the picturesque effect is heightened by its being encircled with cocoa-trees. On the land side, rise thick forests, and on the side of the town is a wooded hill, on which, emerging from the midst of the dark foliage, is seen the church of Nossa Senhora da Victoria. From the summit of this eminence, one of the finest landscapes imaginable presents itself, the gay and peaceful aspect of nature being finely contrasted with the billows of the ocean, dashing eternally with hoarse murmur against the rocks.

"Villa dos Ilheos is one of the most ancient settlements on the coast of Brazil. Francisco Rameiro * laid the foundations in 1540, after having concluded an amicable convention with the Tupininquins. The colony increased, and became flourishing, but subsequently suffered much from the incursions of the Aymores or Botucudoes. In 1602, a peace was concluded with that nation in the captaincy of Bahia, but was not carried into effect in Ilheos till 1603: conformably to the conditions of this treaty, two villages were built for these savages, the remaining descendants of whom still exist under the name of Gherins. But the colony continued to decline, so that, in 1685, it was in a state of extreme decay; and it exhibits in the present day, scarcely a vestige of its former prosperity. Its last stay disappeared with the Jesuits, for all the existing monuments of former times were their work. The large convent, which is the most considerable building in the town, was built in 1723. It is now quite empty and much dilapidated, the roof being gone in several places: the walls are of brick and calca-

* The commander of the armament sent out by Correa, the first donatory.

.cous stone. Among the monuments of the order, may also be reckoned a fine well, solidly built and roofed in. The town consists of small houses, with tiled roofs, but, for the most part, in bad condition, dilapidated or empty; the streets are covered with grass, and it is only on Sundays and holidays that they exhibit any stir of active life. Some persons are then seen collecting from the neighbourhood, to attend mass. There are three churches, and three ecclesiastics, the first of whom bears the title of vicar-general. Among the monuments of the ancient history of Ilheos, some traces of the times in which it was held by the Dutch, are still observable in three redoubts near the entrance of the port, and, on the shore, a large mass of freestone, in the shape of a mill-stone, which is said to have been used for grinding powder.

"The commercial intercourse of this town with the other parts of Brazil, is very trifling. Some *lanchas* carry on a little trade with Bahia in the produce of the neighbouring plantations and forests; but scarcely enough of mandioc is grown for the consumption of the inhabitants, so that strangers stand a chance of finding here nothing to eat. In the hot season, even fish are scarce. The town, by its advantageous position, and its small but sheltered port, possesses the greatest facilities for carrying on a brisk trade. The river is not very considerable, its source being at no great distance in the large forests. A little above the town, it divides itself into three branches. The most northern, called Rio das Fundas, is the shortest and the least; the middle and principal branch, the Rio da Cachoeira, proceeds from the great forests which cover the interior of the *sertam* of Bahia; the most southerly is called Rio do Engenho, from the fazenda (and sugar-mill) of Santa Maria, situated on its banks."* This

* Maximilian's Travels, (Paris edition,) vol. ii. pp. 339—45. Cazal describes these as separate rivers.

establishment occupies a territory twenty leagues in length, and employs 260 negroes. It belonged to the Jesuits. Two roads or tracks have been opened from Villa dos Ilheos to the interior; one along the Cachoeira to Serro Frio; the other, to Villa Nova do Principe in the comarca of Jacobina.

Three miles north of the bar of Ilheos is that of the river Itahype, the outlet of a deep lake of the same name, seven miles in circumference, and about twenty-five miles from the mouth of the river. A number of pretty fazendas, surrounded with groves of the cocoa-palm, adorn the banks of the lower part of this little river, but, a short way up, nothing is to be seen on either hand, but high forests, sometimes covering considerable hills. The lake is famous for abounding in fish. Several inhabitants of Ilheos have plantations on its borders; and these cleared spots serve agreeably to relieve the effect of the dark forests which clothe the mountains on its picturesque borders. Immediately at the entrance of the river appears an island, now fixed, but which formerly floated on the surface of the lake. It is formed of aquatic plants, on which has sprung up a bed of turf, which has given birth to other vegetation. Having been impelled against the bank of the lake, it has fixed itself there. The inhabitants of Ilheos have a number of fabulous stories respecting this beautiful lake, which is one of the first things they mention to a stranger, and of which they are apt to speak in exaggerating terms. The mountains in its neighbourhood are believed to be rich in gold and precious stones, and it has been invested by imagination with the attractions of a *lagoa dourada* (golden lake). About two miles from its borders is the *povoaçao* of Almada (or Almador), the site of one of those villages which were founded, according to the treaty above mentioned, for the Gherins; it is the last inhabited spot in this direction.

Prince Maximilian met with a hospitable reception here from a Mynheer Weyl, a proprietor recently from Holland, who had chosen this spot for establishing a large fazenda. Of the Gherins, only an old man named Captain Manoel, and two or three old women, were left. "The exterior of the old Captain Manoel," says his Highness, "shewed him to be of Botucudo origin, but he had renounced the characteristic ornaments of his tribe, neither his ears nor his lip being disfigured with plugs of wood, and he had let his hair grow on the back of his head. Nevertheless, he displayed a strong predilection for his nation, and evinced extreme pleasure when he heard me pronounce a few words of his language. I excited to a still higher degree his joy and his curiosity, by telling him that I had in my service a young Botucudo: he regretted exceedingly not seeing him, for I had left him behind at the town. The old man preserves his bow and arrows as memorials of former times. Inured to fatigue, he is still vigorous and capable of following the chase notwithstanding his great age. He loves brandy above every thing, and the arrival of M. Weyl in this canton has been a fortunate circumstance for him. In the house of that beneficent man, he will want for nothing."

From Villa dos Ilheos, the enterprising traveller we have been following, struck into the interior, by the route which had recently been opened to Minas Geraes, and afterwards crossed the *sertam* or back country, to Bahia. Leaving him for a while, we pursue the line of coast.

The next river that occurs, is the Rio de Contas or Jussiappe, the most considerable in the comarca. It originates in the comarca of Jacobina, and after receiving several confluents, discharges itself thirty-five miles south of Ponta Mutta, and about the same distance north of Ilheos. Sumacas proceed up it fifteen miles to the first fall, where there is a populous village. The Patachoes

inhabit the country which it waters. Villa de Contas is well situated a little within the mouth, on the southern margin of the river, and has a very good port for sumacas. It has a church and a stone bridge over the larger branch of the river. The inhabitants are obliged by their municipal laws, to grow a certain quantity of mandioc proportionate to the number of slaves which each cultivator possesses; but, in 1806, they were actually suffering from scarcity. Point Mutta is the southern head of the bay of Camamu, the only port in the comarca capable of receiving large vessels. Several small streams fall into it, which are navigable as far as the tide advances. The principal are the Marahu and the Acarahy. The former gives name to a small town about twenty miles from the mouth, to which small craft can proceed. The district produces mandioc, and sends an abundance of water-melons and pine-apples to Bahia. Ten miles below this town, at the confluence of the little river Paratigy with the Marahu, is the small town of Barcellos, inhabited by Indians. On the left bank of the Acarahy, ten miles from its mouth, is the town of Camamu, which gives its name to the bay: it is a place of some trade, and from this point there is a road to the central part of the district of Rio de Contas. From Ponta Mutta almost to the river Jiquirica, the coast is bordered with islands: the principal of these bear the names of Tupiassu, Boypeba, Cayru, and Tinhare. The island of Tinhare is better known by the name of Morro, in consequence of its rock, called the Morro of St. Paulo,* on which Rameiro founded his first settlement; he afterwards abandoned the situation, and removed the colony to Ilheos. This island is eighteen miles long; the others are smaller. Each has its town or *povoaçao*, and some of them have been fortified. The small island of Quieppe forms two unequal bars to the bay of Camamu. Seven

* In latitude 13° 30′ south; longitude, 39° 55′ west. *Lindley.*

miles to the west of this, and almost in the centre of the bay, is the island of Camamu, now generally denominated Das Pedras, on account of the metallic stones which are found here: they are of a ferruginous colour, as heavy as lead, sometimes, it is said, with veins of silver, and are used by the fishermen as leads for their nets and lines. Ten miles north-north-east of Quieppe is the island of Tubaroes, well provided with wood and water. Several inconsiderable rivers, flowing through a mountainous country, fall into the sea along this line of coast, having small settlements near their respective mouths. Ten miles east-north-east of the Jiquirica, which bounds the comarca, is the *Barra Falsa* (false bar) of the famous Bay of All Saints, which gives name to the province.

BAHIA.

THIS bay has justly been pronounced one of the finest harbours in the world. "Here, as well as at Rio de Janeiro," remarks Mr. Southey, "the sea seems to have broken in upon the land; or, more probably, some huge lake has borne down its barrier, and made a way to the ocean. The entrance, which is nearly three leagues wide, is from the south, having the continent on the right hand and the long island of Itaparica on the left.* You are

* This island forms two entrances. According to Mr. Henderson, the eastern or proper entrance is eight miles wide, the western or false bar less than two miles. Its length, north and south, from Point St. Antonio to the mouth of the Pitanga, he makes twenty-three miles; its breadth, east and west, nearly thirty miles, which is clearly an error. Mr. Lindley makes the bay twelve leagues in diameter, and thirty-six leagues in circumference, "without including the islands or remote parts. From the bar off Fort Antonio, the extremity of the large peninsula, to the point of Montserrat, (a small peninsula within the other,) and the beach of Tapagippe, is the part immediately used for anchorage, where

then in a bay, extending to the northward and westward a whole degree, and branching inland in every direction, with deep water every where, and many navigable rivers discharging themselves into it. This little Mediterranean is spotted with above a hundred islands. Many of these are cultivated and inhabited. Perhaps, the whole world does not contain a livelier or more splendid scene, than this beautiful bay, spotted with islands, swarming with vessels of all sizes, from the smallest canoe to the largest merchantman, and echoing to the sounds of business and the music of festivity. In the year 1807, 360 ships entered the bay, and 353 left it:* the imports amounted in value to nearly 850,000*l.*; the exports to nearly a million. Of the articles of export, sugar was the first in importance, tobacco second, and cotton third. Latterly, there had been very little gold, the mines in this captaincy having ceased to attract adventurers. Other articles were rum, rice, coffee, whale oil, hides, tallow, and wood. But the internal trade, to which this magnificent bay and its numerous rivers afford such facility, is described as surprisingly great. It is said that full 800 launches and smacks, of different sizes, arrive daily at the capital; and this statement will not appear exaggerated, if it be remembered, that the people subsist chiefly on vegetables, and that the city receives by far the greater part of its supplies by water."†

vessels are sheltered from every wind in clear ground, and have a space in which the united shipping of the earth might rendezvous without confusion."

* In 1816, 519 merchant vessels entered the bay, and 481 left it. See vol. i. p. 135, and Luccock's *Notes*, p. 628.

† Southey's *Brazil*, vol. i. p. 50, vol. iii. pp. 798—9. More sugar, Mr. Mawe says, is shipped from Bahia, than from all the other ports. The coffee is not esteemed so fine as that of Rio. The markets are well supplied with all the tropical fruits. The bananas are esteemed the best in America.

The city of St. Salvador, better known by the name of Bahia, is, with the exception of Rio, the largest and most flourishing city in Brazil. In ecclesiastical dignity, it claims the precedence, being an archiepiscopal see; it boasts also a higher antiquity, and was long the capital of the empire. Notwithstanding the removal of the seat of government, its natural advantages will enable it under all changes to preserve its rank as the second city in Brazil. Including its suburbs, it extends four miles from north to south, and its population is estimated at above a hundred thousand,* more than two-thirds of whom are mulattoes or negroes, the proportion of slaves being, to use Mr. Southey's expression, "fearfully great."† Mr. Lindley gives the following description of the city as it appeared in 1803.

"Bahia is on the right side of the bay, where the land, at a small distance from the shore rises steeply, to a high ridgy hill, on the summit of which the city is erected, with the exception of a single street that ranges parallel to the beach: from the inequality of the ground and the plantations interspersed, it occupies a considerable space. The buildings are chiefly of the seventeenth century, ill constructed, and, from the slightness of the materials, rapidly decaying, which diminishes the effect of many of them that once were sumptuous. As in all Catholic cities the churches are the most distinguished edifices, and those on which the greatest attention and expense were originally lavished; the cathedral is large,

* As this was the estimate in 1803, previously to the royal emigration and the opening of the ports, the number is now, probably, much more considerable.

† During the administration of the Count d'Arcos, the negroes revolted, and murdered a great many whites; it was their design to exterminate them. The insurrection, however, was soon quelled, and the ringleaders were executed.

but falling into ruin; while the college and archiepiscopal palace (or rather house) adjoining are kept in thorough repair: they were all, at the period of their erection, spacious buildings, and have a proud station on the summit of the hill, commanding the bay and surrounding country. The grand church of the ex-jesuits is by far the most elegant structure of the city. It is composed entirely of European marble, imported for the purpose at an immense cost, while the internal ornaments are superfluously rich: the rails of the altar are of cast brass, the whole of the wood-work is inlaid with tortoise-shell, and the grand chancel, and several other communion recesses (diverging from the side aisles), with their respective altars, are loaded with gildings, paintings, images, and a profusion of other decorations.

"The college and monastery adjoining it, which were the most extensive and best endowed of any in Brazil, having for the last forty years been entirely unoccupied, Government have lately converted them into a commodious hospital. The valuable library is nearly lost to mankind; the books and manuscripts being huddled together in a neglected room, and in a state almost of ruin. Notwithstanding this apparent indifference to science, these modern Goths are tenaciously jealous of strangers approaching the spot. The most valuable of the manuscripts are the unpublished discoveries in the interior of America by the fathers, who penetrated much further than any other individuals. The church and monastery of the Franciscans are extensive buildings: the latter is two stories high. The apartments of the monks open into spacious corridors, that front a large square court with a fountain in the centre; the walls are decorated with European blue tiles in historical compartments, in which passages of heathen mythology and Christian history are curiously blended.

" Immediately adjoining is a separate foundation for the brothers of the Franciscans, or those who, having mixed with the world, may choose in the latter period of their lives a religious retirement. This building is curiously fronted in stucco, and is remarkable for its neat cemetery, consisting of two rows of small arched vaults, three tiers deep, each vault intended to contain a coffin, which being deposited in it, the end of the vault is closed. The vaults are numbered and white-washed, and their arches relieved with neat colouring; a broad aisle paved with black and white marble leads between them, and at the end is a drapery figure of religion. The whole is kept remarkably clean and well ventilated by windows near the roof, which open to the garden; while the spreading banana excludes the sun's rays, and casts a solemn light on this sadly pleasing abode of death.

" The Carmelite church is more modern and more elegantly ornamented than that of the Franciscans; and the monastery adjoining is immensely rich. The same buildings belonging to the Benedictines, are inferior to those of the other orders that have been mentioned, though their revenues are equally productive.*

* Cazal gives the following list of the religious establishments in Bahia. The Benedictines, the Franciscans, the Carmelites, and the barefoot Carmelites have each their monastery; the Almoners of the Holy Land, the barefoot Augustinians, the Carmelites, the Benedictines, the Franciscans, and the bearded Italian Capuchins, each their *hospice*. Besides these, there are four nunneries, two recolhimentos for females, and Third Orders of Carmel, the Trinity, St. Francis, and St. Dominick. These last are stated by Mr. Southey to be harmless associations, to which people, whether married or single, in any occupation or of any rank, might belong. " The Dominicans," he adds, " have never established a colony in Brazil: the exception is remarkable, and has never been explained, for they have certainly not been less ambitious of extending themselves, than their compeers and rivals. It may be hoped that

"Among the parochial churches, those of the Conception, Pillar, and St. Peter, are the most distinguished within the city, and those of St. Antonio and Victoria near the bar, which stand in such striking situations as to form excellent sea-marks. There are besides these, several other churches, and a variety of chapels, monasteries, and convents: all presenting the same tedious load of ornaments, bad taste, and excess of superstition.

" The principal squares or places are, the one immediately adjoining the palace, and that of the Jesuits.

" The streets are confined and narrow, wretchedly paved, never cleaned, and therefore disgustingly dirty. The backs of several of them are the receptacles of filth, which, exposed to so extreme a heat, would affect severely the health of the inhabitants, but for the salubrious air that prevails, in consequence of the elevated situation of the place.

" In the royal square is the house (or palace) of the governor, which is an old insignificant building; and opposite are the mint and public offices. The third side contains the court-house of the *relaçáô*, and the remaining one, the hall of the senate and the prison. The latter is an extensive structure, of which the lower divisions are exceedingly strong and secure, the windows having two sets of bars about eighteen inches from each other, of heavy circular iron. These dungeons are entered from a grated room above, by trap-doors. In the centre of the first story is a well-secured hall, out of which open a

Brazil will continue free from them; for, though they may not have sunk into such utter contempt as the Franciscans, the Order, as professing poverty, is equally injurious to the state. Its legends exceed those of the Franciscans in monstrous falsehood, and scarcely yield to them in blasphemy; and it is, above all other orders, infamous and execrable for the part it has borne in the Inquisition." *History of Brazil*, vol. iii. p. 795.

number of dark cells (*secretos*), about six feet square, that have strong close doors, but no windows, and are provided each with a heavy chain, fastened to a ring in the wall. These cells are for inquisition and state criminals.

" The prison seldom contains less than two hundred persons, the greater part confined for offences disgraceful to society; the rest are run-away slaves and state victims, too frequently placed there on the most trifling pretences.

" A small hospital adjoins the prison; but, from the heat of the climate, the close situation of the building, the want of a free circulation of air, and the total neglect of cleanliness, there are upwards of a hundred burials in a year. The prison is supplied with water by the slave prisoners, who have iron collars round their necks, through which a chain passes and fastens them together. The water is conveyed in small barrels from a distance, and is the only article which the prison allows. The support of the prisoners depends on themselves, or a religious society, the *misericordia*, who solicit, in all parts of the city, charitable donations, and distribute daily farinha, soup, and other provisions, to the most wretched of the immured.

" The custom-house and wharfs are on the beach, as also is the dock-yard; near which are the marine storehouses and offices, with the house of the intendant, or port-commander.

" Some, but not many, of the superior class of inhabitants, have erected for themselves large and elegant mansions (particularly in the vicinity of the town), and have appropriately fitted them up. The habitations of other individuals who are opulent, are roomy and convenient, but shabbily furnished. Viewing them from the street, they have a dull and dirty appearance; and what they thus promise from without, is completely realised

within. In reality, I never saw a country where the inhabitants are so completely neglectful of cleanliness as in Brazil. The houses belonging to tradesmen and shopkeepers are still more disgusting: instead of glazed windows, they have wooden drop-lattices, which want even the addition of painting to enliven or preserve them. The lowest order of soldiers, mulattoes, and negroes, have tiled cabins, open to the roof, with a single lattice window. These several and different buildings (with the exception of a street or two) are all intermingled throughout the city, and exhibit a motley and disagreeable appearance."

Things appear to have been not much improved in 1821, nearly twenty years later, when Bahia was visited by an intelligent female traveller. Mrs. Graham landed at the arsenal or dock-yard. "The street into which we proceeded through the arsenal gate," she says, "forms, at this place, the breadth of the whole lower town of Bahia, and is, without any exception, the filthiest place I ever was in. It is extremely narrow; yet, all the working artificers bring their benches and tools into the streets. In the interstices between them, along the walls, are fruit-sellers, venders of sausages, black puddings, fried fish, oil and sugar-cakes, negroes platting hats or mats, *caderas* (a kind of sedan-chair) with their bearers, dogs, pigs, and poultry, without partition or distinction; and, as the gutter runs in the middle of the street, every thing is thrown there from the different stalls, as well as from the windows, and there the animals live and feed! In this street" (called the *Praya*) "are the warehouses and country-houses of the merchants, both native and foreign. The buildings are high, but neither so handsome nor so airy as those of Pernambuco."*

* Graham's Journal, &c. p. 133.

The upper town (*cidade alta*), which is beautifully situated on the ridge between the sea and the bay, is, from its height and the slope of its streets, much cleaner than the port. Here, besides the cathedral, the archiepiscopal palace, the governor's palace, the Jesuits' college, and other public buildings already mentioned, there is a misericordia with its hospital, founded in 1716,* which Mrs. Graham describes as a fair specimen of the convents. "It surrounds a large area, subdivided into smaller courts: the staircase is of marble, inlaid with coloured stucco, and the sides are lined with tiles of porcelain, so as to form arabesques, often of very pretty design. This is both a cool and a cleanly lining to a wall, especially for a hospital. The principal rooms are also decorated in the same manner, and many of the fronts and cupolas of the churches are covered with similar tiles, the effect of which is often exceedingly agreeable when seen among the trees and plainer buildings. The chapel belonging to the hospital is handsome, a little gaudy, however: the ceiling is respectably painted. The

* Part of the funds for supporting this and other hospitals, is stated to be derived from lotteries; and the Conde dos Arcos, when minister, established a lottery for the support of the public library. "It is remarkable," Mr. Lindley says, "what sums the established religion here requires in alms from its votaries, and how freely the requisition is obeyed. Every day the holy brothers of the orders of St. Francis, Carmel, St. Theresa, Benedict, &c. knock at the doors or windows of the inhabitants, rich or poor, and do not depart without a tribute, or at least without being sturdily importunate. Besides these licensed pillagers, there is a legion of subordinate agents; such as the friars of the Holy Sepulchre, of Misericordia, the Capuchins, and (worst of all) the brothers of the Sanctissimo Sacramento: which latter, with a short blue or crimson silk cloak over their ordinary dress, a silver staff in their hands, and a large velvet pocket bearing an embossed silver plate, meet you at every turn; and, with an air of authority, demand an offering, which is rarely refused them."

treatment of the sick is humane, and they are well provided with food and other necessaries; but the medical practice, though much improved of late years, is not the most enlightened." The theatre (opened in May 1812) is a handsome building, large, and well laid out, but dirty inside: the actors are very bad, the orchestra tolerable.

The society of Bahia has been deemed superior to that of Rio. "In their intercourse with foreigners," says Mr. Lindley, "far less *hauteur* is seen in Bahia than in any other part of the coast." Nothing, however, can be much more degraded than the state both of manners and of morals. With regard to the former, we shall here avail ourselves of Mrs. Graham's lively narrative: she is describing a tour of morning visits. "In the first place, the houses, for the most part, are disgustingly dirty. The lower story usually consists of cells for the slaves, stabling, &c.; the staircases are narrow and dark; and at more than one house, we waited in a passage while the servants ran to open the doors and windows of the sitting-rooms, and to call their mistresses, who were enjoying their undress in their own apartments. When they appeared, I could scarcely believe that one half were gentlewomen. As they wear neither stay nor bodice, the figure becomes almost indecently slovenly after very early youth; and this is the more disgusting, as they are very thinly clad, wear no neck-handkerchiefs, and scarcely any sleeves. Then, in this hot climate, it is unpleasant to see dark cottons and stuffs, without any white linen, near the skin; hair black, ill combed, and dishevelled, or knotted unbecomingly, or, still worse, *en papillote*, and the whole person bearing an unwashed appearance. When, at any of the houses, the bustle of opening the cobwebbed windows and assembling the family was over, in two or three instances, the servants had to remove the dishes of sugar

mandioc, and other provisions which had been left in the best rooms to dry. There is usually a sofa at each end of the room, and to the right and left, a long file of chairs, which look as if they never could be moved out of their place. Between the two sets of seats is a space which, I am told, is often used for dancing; and, in every house, I saw either a guitar or a piano, and generally both. Prints and pictures, the latter the worst daubs I ever saw, decorate the halls pretty generally; and there are besides, crucifixes and other things of the kind. Some houses, however, are more neatly arranged. One, I think belonging to a captain of the navy, was papered, the floors laid with mat, and the tables ornamented with pretty porcelain, Indian and French: the lady too was neatly dressed in a French wrapper. Another house, belonging to one of the judges, was also clean, and of a more stately appearance than the rest, though the inhabitant was neither richer nor of higher rank. Glass chandeliers were suspended from the roof, and handsome mirrors were intermixed with the prints and pictures. A good deal of handsome china was displayed round the room; but the jars, as well as the chairs and tables, seemed to form an inseparable part of the walls."

The gentlemen generally dress as in Lisbon, with an excess of embroidery and spangles on their waistcoats and lace on their linen, their shoe and knee buckles often of solid gold. But, at home, these gala clothes are laid aside for a gown or thin jacket, or merely a shirt and drawers. The usual dress of the ladies is a single petticoat over a chemise, the latter generally of the thinnest muslin, much worked and ornamented, and so full at the bosom as to drop over the shoulders on the smallest movement. "This violation of feminine delicacy," says Mr. Lindley, "appears the more disgusting, as the complexion of the Brazilians is in general very indifferent,

approaching to an obscure tawny colour. Stockings are scarcely ever used; and during the rainy season, which is to them cold, they shuffle about in a pair of slippers, dressed in a thick blue and white cotton wrapper or a woollen great coat faced with shag. When attending mass, a deep black silk mantle, worn over the head, conceals the transparent costume beneath. On some public occasions and visits of ceremony, a few ladies of rank adopt the European dress." This has probably come more extensively into vogue. In a large party of well-dressed women whom Mrs. Graham met, she had great difficulty, she says, in recognising the slatterns of the morning. "The *senhoras* were all dressed after the French fashion: corset, *fichu*, garniture, all was proper, and even elegant, and there was a great display of jewels." Education is at the lowest ebb. The men, Mrs. Graham says, divide nearly their whole time between the counting-house and the gaming-table. "Of those who read on political subjects, most are disciples of Voltaire; and they outgo his doctrines on politics, and equal his indecency as to religion." There is a considerable number of English residents at Bahia,* who have a chapel and a chaplain, which, together with a hospital for English sailors, are supported by a contribution fund. "They are hospitable and sociable among each other," says Mrs. Graham, "and often dine together; the ladies love music and dancing, and some of the men gamble as much as the Portuguese. Upon the whole, society is at a low, very low scale here among the English."

"The police here is in a wretched state. The use of the dagger is so frequent, that the secret murders generally average two hundred yearly, between the upper and lower

* In 1821, there were eighteen English mercantile houses established at Bahia, two French, and two German. The English trade is principally carried on with Liverpool.

towns. To this evil, the darkness and steepness of the streets mainly contribute, by furnishing almost a certainty of escape. The nominal *intendente da policia* is also the supreme judge in criminal cases. No law, however, has as yet determined the limits or scope, either of his power or that of the lieutenant-colonel of police, who calls upon a few soldiers from any of the garrisons whenever he has to act, and who appoints military patroles also from among the soldiers on duty. It often happens that persons accused before this formidable officer, are seized and imprisoned for years, without ever being brought to a trial. A malicious information, whether true or false, subjects a man's private house to be broken open by the colonel and his gang; and if the master escapes imprisonment, it is well, though the house scarcely ever escapes pillage. In cases of riot and quarrels in the streets, the colonel generally orders the soldiers to fall on with canes, and beat the people into their senses. Such being the state of the police, it is, perhaps, more wonderful, that murders are so few, than that they are so many. Where there is little or no public justice, private revenge will take its place."*

There are six corps of militia in Bahia: 1st, The government guard of honour, consisting of gentlemen mounted; 2d, A squadron of flying artillery; 3d, Two regiments of whites, chiefly trades-people; 4th, A regiment of mulattoes; and 5th, One of free blacks, which is the best trained and most serviceable of all: the whole amounting to between 4 and 5000 men, and, with the regiments of country militia, to about 15,000.† The officers, with the exception of the majors and adjutants, who are of the line, receive no pay. The city is protected by

* Graham's Journal, pp. 140,1.

† We have followed Mrs. Graham as the latest authority. Prince Maximilian states, that there are four regiments of the line, and as many of militia.

a number of forts and batteries, but many of them are nearly nugatory from the want of ordnance. The principal are those of St. Philip and do Mar, described by Mr. Lindley as follows:

"The Fort do Mar was erected about the year 1600, on a small rocky bank of the inner bay, three quarters of a mile from the shore. It was first built in a circular form; but when the Dutch entered the bay in 1624, they were so greatly annoyed by it, during their attempt to take possession of the place, that they thought it deserving of additional fortifications, and they completed it to the shape it bears at present, raising the original tower, and surrounding it with an extensive lower battery. The diameter of the whole is about two hundred and seventy feet, and that of the upper tower battery a hundred: the lower battery mounts twenty-nine guns, of which there are a few that are forty-two pounders, and none less than twenty-four; the upper contains only sixteen, consisting of twenty-fours and eighteens. The tower ascends from the level of the lower battery about twenty-five feet: it is not a solid mass, but has several apartments, which diverge like rays from the centre to the exterior, and are employed as magazines for powder, artillery stores, &c. and for barracks. The top of the tower is paved with flag-stones, carefully cemented and sloped, to preserve the rain that falls on its surface, which, collecting in the centre, descends through a grate into an extensive reservoir below, and affords a sufficiency of water for the garrison for six months without any other supplies. The house and offices of the commandant, and some rooms for state or military prisoners, are ranged on the lower battery, near the sloping entrance of the fort, on the side fronting the sea. The garrison, when complete, consists of five hundred men; but few only attend duty. The shipping usually

anchor between this fort and the city, where they are immediately under its protection, and that of St. Philip, on the opposite shore. On the extreme point of the peninsula, and nearly opposite the bar, is the small antique fort and lighthouse of St. Antonio *do Barro;* and as you proceed to the bar, a deep, small bay indents the shore, rising to a sandy beach, and flanked on one side by the trifling fort of Santa Maria, and on the other by St. Diego, which is a circular battery. At the extremity of the city that leads to the sea, an eighteen-gun battery, chiefly twenty-fours, ranges at water-mark, and is in tolerable condition. Passing this, the dock-yard is defended by the high bulwark battery of St. Philip, mounting about thirty guns of various bores. There are three other insignificant batteries on the inhabited part of the beach, and a small one on the point of Montserrat. The city is defended on the land side, at the south and north passes, which are parallel to the beach, by three forts; on the south, by the extensive fortification and outworks of St. Pedro, the completest of the whole, but at the present moment nearly dismantled. The northern pass is a valley entirely commanded by Barbalho on the one side, and St. Antonio *do Carmo* on the opposite eminence, nearer the bay. This last is a quadrangular fort, that has a few guns peeping over its glacis."

Bahia, at the period of Mr. Lindley's detention there, was without a single inn. Coffee-houses and eating-houses abounded in every street, but they were of the most wretched description, "inconceivably dirty, and the cooking so horrible that a St. Giles's cellar is far preferable." Even the middle classes were not habituated to the use of knives and forks, but rolled the meat, vegetables, and mandioc meal into a ball, in the palm of their hands, after the Moorish manner. But, with regard to these and

various particulars described by Mr. Lindley and other travellers, Prince Maximilian assures us, while he bears his testimony to their general accuracy, that many of the abuses, ridiculous practices, and Gothic customs which they witnessed, have disappeared with the progress of civilisation.* "For example," he says, "there exists now no difference between the dress of the inhabitants of this country and that of Europeans; and luxury and elegance prevail every where to a high degree." With regard to any improvement in morals, he is silent, simply observing that the manners and usages absolutely resemble those of the Portuguese in Europe; "and it is said," he adds, "that in the higher classes there reigns an unbridled dissipation." His Highness amply confirms Lindley's account of the incredible number of religious festivals, which occur almost daily, "presenting a continued round of opportunities for uniting devotion and pleasure, which is eagerly embraced, especially by the ladies." "The chief amusements of the citizens," says the English traveller, "are the feasts of the different saints, professions of nuns, sumptuous funerals, the holy or passion week, &c., which are all celebrated in rotation with grand ceremonies, a full concert, and frequent processions." On such occasions, the streets are swept and strewed with white sand and flowers; the windows are illuminated; and the processions, lighted by a great number of tapers

* When Mr. Lindley was at Bahia, he inquired at all the booksellers' shops for French or English works, "but to no purpose, they not having one, ancient or modern. One bookseller, indeed, with some exultation, produced a Portuguese translation of Robinson Crusoe, and particularly recommended it." Bahia was indebted to the enlightened efforts of the Conde dos Arcos for several important improvements: besides the additions he made to the public library, he founded a printing-house and a glass-house, laid out a public promenade, and patronised the arts and sciences. See Maximilian's Travels, (Paris ed.) vol. iii. p. 240.

borne by the faithful, move onward, to the sound of bells and fire-works, towards the church prepared for their reception. The burials are conducted likewise at night, by the light of torches and flambeaus. Music forms an important part of these religious festivities. The Portuguese are a musical people, and the negroes also are passionately fond of music. The "city-wayts" are all negroes, and they have always a full band ready for service, which finds constant employ from public or private devotion. "Every Portuguese," remarks Mr. Southey, "has his saint, every saint has his day, and on every saint's day, some of his votaries summon the musicians to celebrate the festival, and accompany them to the church or chapel of the idol, frequently by water." "It is also a custom," Mr. Lindley says, "with the European merchantships, to have music on their arrival, at departure, and on the first day of taking in cargo, which repeatedly gives us a little concert, and sounds charmingly from the water. These musicians are trained by the different barber-surgeons of the city, who are of the same colour, and have been itinerant musicians from time immemorial. Numerous as these swarthy sons of harmony are, they find constant employment, not only as above mentioned, but also at the entrance of the churches on celebration of festivals, where they sit playing lively pieces, regardless of the solemnities going forward within." Sometimes, the guitar or violin is called in to aid amusements of a more secular kind; and Mr. Lindley mentions an infamous dance, a mixture of the Spanish fandango and the African, of which the Brazilians are passionately fond. The orgies of the dancing girls in India, he says, do not equal the flagrancy of this "national dance," which certainly breaks down the barriers of decency, and paves the way to depravity and vice. Their participation in the religion of the country, and the inconsistent familiarity to which

they are admitted, renders the slaves impudent and licentious to a high degree. "The negro feels his consequence increased by the great numbers that are emancipated through service, favour, or purchase, who are of course *senhors*, and frequently assume the character, and act it with full as much propriety as their late possessors." Such a state of society must be regarded as extremely critical, and the transitory Palmarese republic * supplies an instructive lesson. Slavery cannot exist without containing in itself the seeds of danger. The circumstance of their being of the same religion as their masters, however, so far from being unfavourable to subordination, tends to lessen the danger. The evil lies in the nature of that religion, which is but little removed from heathenism.

The environs of Bahia are very beautiful, and being constantly refreshed by alternate land and sea breezes, the climate is deemed very healthy. The Reconcave, as the country which extends round the whole sweep of this magnificent bay is denominated, is one of the richest and most populous parts of Brazil. It varies in breadth from twelve to forty miles. Upon the rivers which intersect it, and fall into the bay, are situated many flourishing towns, which carry on an active trade with the capital; but it is remarkable, that this trade is carried on by barter and account, notwithstanding the abundance of specie in the country. Cachoeira, one of the largest towns of the Reconcave, contained, in 1804, 1088 families: Mr. Henderson states the inhabitants at nearly 10,000. The town is seated on the river Paraguassu, which divides it into two parts, and sometimes, at the highest floods, intrudes upon the inhabitants. The public edifices, consisting of a municipal house, various churches, chapels, and convents, a hospital and a fountain, are built of stone; there

* See vol. i. p 44.

are also stone bridges, and the streets are paved. It has a *juiz de fora* and royal masters. Near this town was found a mass of native copper weighing a ton and a half: it is now in the royal museum at Lisbon. Three miles to the north-north-east of Cachoeira is the aldeia of Belem, founded by the Jesuits, who had a seminary there. Fifteen miles below Cachoeira, on the same river, is Maragogype, which is also a considerable town, containing a church and four chapels. The other chief towns are St. Amaro, on the right bank of the Serigy or Serzipe, twelve miles from its mouth and forty north-west of Bahia; and Jaguaripe, on the right bank of the river of the same name, seven miles from its mouth, the inhabitants of which are chiefly manufacturers of earthenware. The island of Itapa-rica, which is twenty-three miles long from north to south, and ten in breadth, contains a considerable town, which carries on the whale fishery.

The province of Bahia is naturally divided by a chain of mountains of considerable elevation, from the eastern side of which proceed the numerous streams which flow into the Reconcave, or form the rivers of Ilheos. The whole western division is comprehended within the comarca of Jacobina, but, on account of its great extent, will probably be divided eventually into two equal districts; that of Jacobina to the north, and Rio de Contas to the south. A considerable portion of it is occupied with cattle-plains, which are unsusceptible of cultivation. This comarca was formerly rich in gold:* "in all better things," remarks Mr. Southey, it is "greatly inferior to the maritime district. This portion comprehends the country on which the Rio St. Francisco enters, when it leaves its native province; and it resembles in its character

* According to Cazal, it affords gold, silver, copper, iron, saltpetre, and crystals.

the worst part of the *sertoens** of Pernambuco and Seara. Population, however, is scattered every where, and every where cattle are bred, which sometimes are full-fed in abundant pastures, and at other times endure the extreme of want, according to the season. The regular winter, or wet season, extends only some thirty leagues from the coast; and what rain falls in the interior, comes only in thunder showers, which are of course irregular, in no part frequent, and occur seldomer in the northern part of the province than in the south. After rain, the ground is presently covered with rich verdure, and the cattle fatten; but, when drought succeeds to this season of abundance, they are reduced to browse upon such shrubs as resist the burning sun: the streams fail; and if the tanks, which the thunder showers had filled, are dried also, a dreadful mortality ensues. Because of the frequency of this evil, the province cannot depend upon its own pastures, but looks to Goyaz and Piauhy for a regular supply. Nevertheless, a trade in cattle has been carried on within the captaincy, but at an unmerciful expense of (animal) life, because of the intense heat, and the want of water on the way. The road is tracked with the skeletons of the poor creatures who perish on the journey: never more than half the drove reach the place of slaughter; frequently not a third part. Yet, with all this loss, meat, in 1789, sold at Bahia for about three farthings a pound."†

Jacobina, the residence of the ouvidor, is still a town of some importance, though the mines have ceased to be productive, and its smelting-house is broken up. It is situated near the left bank of the southern branch of the

* A word of uncertain derivation, (in the singular, *sertam*,) signifying the interior or midland part. *Pelo sertao da calma* is a phrase signifying, in the heat of the day; literally, the midst of the heat.

† Southey's Brazil, vol. iii. p. 802.

Itapicuru, three miles below a lake which communicates with the river. Its inhabitants cultivate wheat, which is not found further north, and the fruits as well as the pulse and grain of Portugal flourish in this elevated district: they export, in particular, large quantities of quince marmalade. The only other towns in the northern part of the comarca, are, Villa Nova da Rainha, a mere village sixty miles north of Jacobina, and Uruba, a small town on the banks of the St. Francisco, about seventy miles north-west of Rio de Contas. This latter town lies about a hundred and thirty miles south of Jacobina.* The intermediate tract of country is almost entirely uninhabited, and travellers are obliged to carry water with them. Rio de Contas has prospered, owing to its being in the high road from Bahia to Goyaz. It owed its origin to its gold mines, discovered in 1718; but, since these have failed, the inhabitants have taken to the more advantageous occupations of agriculture. The only town in the comarca south of Contas, is Villa Nova do Principe, formerly called Caytete, fifty miles west-south-west of the former town,—a small place depending chiefly on its cotton plantations and the breeding of cattle.

We now return to Prince Maximilian, whom we left at Villa dos Ilheos, about to undertake an adventurous journey into the interior, far beyond the precincts of civilised society, in regions where only a hunter could exist, and where no one but a naturalist could find amusement. His Highness's narrative, though diversified by few occurrences, is extremely interesting, and his contributions to natural history are numerous and valuable. It is impossible, however, within the limits to which we must

* The nearest track from Rio de Contas to Jacobina, Cazal states, is not more than 130 miles, but is little frequented, water not being met with for several days' journey. The way usually frequented exceeds 230 miles.

restrict ourselves, to give more than a brief outline of his journey.*

FROM ILHEOS TO MINAS GERAES.

THE route from Ilheos to Minas Geraes follows the course of the Cachoeira, and, in about a league and a half from the town, enters upon unbroken forests, in which axes and bills are not a less necessary part of the traveller's baggage than farinha, salt-meat, and brandy. The track led over several considerable hills, sometimes through marshes. Torrents had to be passed, over which there had been thrown bridges, but these were for the most part fallen or ruinous. Various are the impediments, annoyances, and dangers which the traveller has to surmount, from the thorny vegetation, deep ravines, insect plagues, of which the most formidable are wasps' nests, venomous reptiles, and, by night, the visits of jaguars and ounces; added to which, the party in the present instance suffered much from violent rains. "Scratched and maimed by the thorns, soaked by the rain, exhausted by the incessant perspiration caused by the heat," says his Highness describing his plight, "the traveller is nevertheless transported with admiration at the sight of this magnificent vegetation." On the fourth day after entering the forest, the party arrived at San Pedro, the last establishment which is met with on ascending this river. "What a wretched village!" is his exclamation. "Here are about ten miserable mud houses, with a church which is no better than a sort of coach-house, built of clay; and yet, they have given to this place the name of Villa de San Pedro d'Alcantara,—though it is generally called

* This part of the author's travels occupies nearly a volume of the Paris edition, viz. chap. xiv. to xviii. inclusive.

simply As Ferradas, from a ledge of rocks which traverses the river at a short distance, called Banca das Ferradas. This village was founded two years ago, on finishing the route to Minas. Persons of all sorts were collected here, some Spaniards, several Indian families, and some *pardos* or persons of colour, and finally, a band of Camacan Indians (a tribe of the Mongoyos) from the neighbouring forests.* As soon as the church was finished, the ouvidor installed the vicar. A few days' distance further, another little church was erected, at a place where the new route enters on the *sertam* which borders the Rio Salgado: here mass was celebrated, and plantations were established, but this little settlement has fallen into ruin; the place has again become a wilderness, and answers no purpose whatever. All this labour and expense have been thrown away, since no use has been made of the route; and in a very short time, it will be impossible to discover any trace of it. The *mineiros* prefer to this laborious journey through the forests, the route which traverses the campos or bare plains of the sertam of Bahia (Jacobina); as Villa dos Ilheos affords neither a market for their commodities, nor vessels to convey them to Bahia. The decay of St. Pedro keeps pace with that of the new road, the bad condition of which our own experience taught us

* The Camacans are found extending over the territory between the Rio Pardo (or Patype) and the Rio das Contas. On the banks of the latter river, they have entirely renounced their savage habits; and even here, they are far more civilised than their neighbours the Patachoes and Botucudoes, cultivating mandioc and vegetables, and having fixed residences. They were reduced in 1806, by the expedition sent down the Pardo, "their fear of the Botucudoes inducing them to take shelter in civilisation." See Southey's Brazil, vol. iii. pp. 692, 804. Maximilian's Travels, (Paris ed.) vol. iii. pp. 34, 155, *et seq.* In many respects they resemble the Goytacazes. They are potters, and discover more industry than the savages of the coast. They sleep on beds, not in hammocks. They wear their hair long, and are partially clothed.

too frequently in the course of our journey. The individuals forcibly collected in the *Villa*, not finding here the supplies they needed, in part decamped; many of the Camacan Indians were carried off by a contagious disorder, and the survivors fled to their forests. St. Pedro is at present inhabited by only a priest and half a dozen families, who devoutly wish that the government would have compassion on them. It is said, that they talk of clearing the road afresh, and sending hither a reinforcement of inhabitants. The village stands in a country completely wild, surrounded, on all sides, with forests full of wild beasts and frequented by parties of Patachoes."

The journey to Ilheos is frequently performed by water, which, notwithstanding that the navigation is impeded by falls, shallows, and other impediments, takes only a day: to ascend the river, requires two days. Prince Maximilian, finding it necessary to return to Ilheos to complete his travelling arrangements, hired a canoe, and descended the stream, which reminded him of the upper part of the Belmonte: only, the Cachoeira is small in comparison. He returned to St. Pedro in the same manner; and at length, on the 6th of January, 1817, the whole cavalcade was early in motion on their way to Minas Geraes. Towards the end of the second day, they crossed the Rio Salgado, a little above its confluence with the Cachoeira, where it is between forty and fifty paces in width. The road passes over a succession of hills, but gradually increases in elevation, and becomes more dry, and the difference of climate is observable in the altered character of the vegetation. At Porto da Canoa, (a point of the river so called because canoes have reached thus far,) the traveller enters on that description of forest which is called in Brazil a *catinga*. Here, the same species of trees that, in the vast, humid, and thickly wooded forests of the coast, tower up to a considerable height, remain

much lower, while these dry regions present a variety of productions peculiar to such situations. The thorny points of the bromelia, which covers the ground in thick tufts, is especially annoying to the Brazilian hunter, who always goes barefoot; and various other prickly plants embarrass and wound the traveller. In some places, the ground is intersected by deep ravines, and dark valleys meet the eye, of a savage aspect, where prevails a perpetual coolness. Along the limpid torrents which precipitate themselves from the rocks, grow flowers of the most splendid hues, which man has never come to these distant regions to admire. The solitary steps of the Patacho hunter, the tapir, or the ounce, alone break the silence of these uninhabited wildernesses. On the sixth day, the travellers again reached the Cachoeira, and for the last time, where it makes an elbow, crossing the route in a southerly direction: beyond this, the rivers which traverse the track, fall into the Rio Pardo. From the 12th to the 17th, the party halted, while a detachment was sent off to a village of Camacan Indians, a day and a half distant, to endeavour to procure some maize for the half-famished mules. They returned without having been able to succeed. On the 17th, the travellers pursued their route through the forests. The next day, they reached the *Duos Riachos;* and on the 19th, the banks of the Rio Catole, from which they had still nearly two days' journey to the first human habitations. Prince Maximilian resolved, therefore, again to halt, while he sent forward some of his people to Beruga for some corn. The interval was spent in exploring the forests and hunting. On the sixth day, the men returned with a supply, and the party was again in motion on the 26th. The next day, after travelling between three and four leagues, their ears were suddenly saluted with the crow of a cock, "the constant companion of man, even in these remote solitudes." Emerging from the shades

of the forest, they beheld with delight, stretched before them, a field of maize and mandioc, and once more above their heads a considerable expanse of azure sky. Beyond the forests appeared the summits of blue mountains, now an extraordinary and delightful prospect. But they had again to enter these "umbrageous solitudes." They rested a day at the miserable little *aldeia* of Beruga, consisting of three or four mud huts, covered with the bark of trees, which harboured myriads of *carapatos;* yet, to travellers who had passed twenty-two days in the midst of wild forests, they afforded a welcome asylum. The Beruga is a small stream which falls at a short distance into the Pardo, whose valley they were now approaching. On resuming their journey, they soon reached its banks, where its grey and troubled waters dash over a rocky channel; and they followed its course for some time, ascending the valley till it opened into a wild and gloomy *catinga*, inclosed by high, wooded mountains,—a savage solitude of imposing and terrific character. The second day, they ascended the first and highest of a chain of mountains, called the *Serra do Mundo Novo*, beyond which the forests, the vegetation, the birds, the butterflies, all appeared to belong indeed to a "new world" so changed was the aspect of every thing, and so new the sounds which met the ear. The trees were much diminished in height. At Barra da Vareda, which they reached at the end of this day's journey, the travellers found themselves suddenly introduced to an open plain, and, at the fine fazenda of the *capitam* Ferreira Campos, met with a hospitable reception, which indemnified them for the fatigues of this arduous journey. "The inhabitants of Barra da Vareda assured us," says his Highness, "that we had been singularly fortunate, inasmuch as it is a rare circumstance for men and animals to issue safe and sound from these regions after the rainy season has com-

menced." The valley of the Vareda is traversed at its south-eastern extremity by the Rio Pardo, which receives the tribute of this little rivulet.

On the 5th of February, Prince Maximilian took leave of his hospitable host, and again set forward. A forest three leagues in extent had now to be traversed; but the route insensibly rises, the air becomes more dry and salubrious, and the gently rounded mountains announce to the traveller his approach to open plains and elevated campos. He has no longer any thing to fear from the low fever against which he has had to struggle in the humid forests below, and may now drink milk with impunity. But he soon finds his slight clothing insufficient, and is in danger of catarrh. Towards evening, they reached Anjicos, an old ruined house near a lake, belonging to the *capitam.* The next day, passing over immense pastures, they arrived at the fazenda of Vareda, the property of this same Senhor Ferreira. The next stage brought them to the fazenda of Tamburil, a village situated in a mountainous canton on the rivulet da Ressaque, where no Englishman had yet been seen. A rugged country, covered with catingas, and intersected by ravines, extends from this place towards the frontiers of Minas Geraes. In approaching Ressaque, an aldeia consisting of three families of mamalucoes, Prince Maximilian passed through several woods entirely stripped of their foliage, like the forests of Europe in winter. He was unable to obtain a satisfactory explanation of the phenomenon. One planter told him, that, two or three years before, in the month of August, a very hard frost had killed the trees, while others maintained that an extreme dryness in the soil had occasioned it. Four leagues from Ressaque is the fazenda of Ilha, and a league and a half further is the *quartel geral de Valo*, which marks the limits of Minas Geraes. They found at this station

a pioneer and two soldiers. This was the furthest point which Prince Maximilian reached in this direction, an indisposition brought on by the climate, compelling him to abandon his intention of penetrating into Minas Geraes. Accordingly, after passing some time at the quartel, occupying himself in the pursuits of the naturalist, he returned to Vareda, from whence he struck across a dry tract of country covered with catingas, to the *arraial de Conquista*, distant two days' journey, the chief place in this part of the comarca. It contains about forty low houses and a church, which was then building at the expense of some rich proprietors in the neighbourhood. Being in the road to Bahia, from the grazing districts, it is a great thoroughfare. More than a thousand head of cattle sometimes pass through in the course of a week. The inhabitants, however, are poor, and the state of society here is peculiarly bad. From this place, there are several routes to Bahia. The high road from Minas Novas and Minas Geraes, passes through Caytete (Villa Nova do Principe), Rio das Contas, and Cachoeira. Another approaches nearer to the arraial de Conquista, and follows the course of the Rio Gaviam, which falls into the das Contas. The shortest, which is taken by the drovers of Conquista, passing over a dry and elevated part of the sertam, formerly in the possession of the Camacans, and now containing only a few scattered fazendas,—crosses the valley of the Contas, where the river is not sixty paces in width, and afterwards that of the Jiquiriça. This was the route pursued by Prince Maximilian; but his journey terminated with an unpleasant adventure. At the *arraial* of Laje, a mile beyond the latter river, he was arrested by a patrole of seventy armed men, under the suspicion of being an Englishman or an American, and, as such, an abettor of the Pernambucan revolution, and was escorted with every indignity to Nazareth, a considerable town

situated on both banks of the Jaguaripe, and containing about 8000 souls. Here he was detained while the *capitam mor* sent off to Bahia for further orders, on the receipt of which the prince was of course liberated. He proceeded to Bahia, from which port he embarked for Europe.

It is not a little remarkable, that the subordinate officer at Valo, was one of the two soldiers who had accompanied Mr. Mawe in his journey to Tejuco. From this man, Prince Maximilian obtained a good deal of information, which somewhat relieved the dreariness of his sojourn in this solitary place. The sertam of Bahia there borders on the elevated plains called the *campos geracs*, which are thus described. "Immense plains entirely bare of forests, or rather hills with gentle acclivities which extend in chains, covered with tall and dry grass and scattered shrubs, present themselves as far as the eye can reach. These campos, which stretch to the Rio St. Francisco, to Pernambuco, Goyaz, and beyond, are intersected in different directions by valleys whence issue the rivers which, from this elevated plateau, descend to the sea. The most remarkable is the Rio St. Francisco: it has its source in the Serra da Canastra, which may be regarded as the boundary between the provinces of Minas Geraes and Goyaz. In the valleys which cut this chain and these naked plateaus, the borders of the rivers and brooks are garnished with forests. Isolated woods are also found hidden in these hollows, especially on approaching the frontiers of Minas Geraes. This kind of forests is one of the chief characteristics of these open regions. You imagine yourself sometimes to have before you one continued plain, when all at once you find yourself on the border of a narrow valley with deep, precipitous sides; you hear the murmur of a rivulet beneath, and the eye falls upon the tops of a forest, the trees of which, embellished with flowers of various hues, adorn its banks. Here, in the cold season,

the sky is constantly clouded, and the wind blows incessantly: in the dry season, the heat is suffocating, all herbage is dried up, the sun is scorching, and all drinkable water fails. This description," continues Prince Maximilian, "proves that the *campos geracs* of eastern Brazil, though destitute of forests, and generally level, differ notwithstanding from the steppes both of the old and the new world; for the *llanos* or steppes to the north of the Oronoco, and the pampas of Buenos Ayres, do not resemble the *campos geracs*, and the steppes of the old world are still more dissimilar. These *campos geracs* are not perfectly level: their surface presents alternately eminences of gentle ascent and plateaus. Their aspect is monotonous and lifeless, especially in the dry season; nevertheless, they are not so naked as the *llanos* and the *pampas*, and still less so than the steppes of the old world, for they are every where carpeted with grass which often grows tolerably high, while little shrubs generally cover the declivities, and sometimes whole plateaus. Consequently, the rays of the sun do not here produce effects so violent as in the *llanos*; nor do we meet here with those dry, suffocating winds and whirlwinds of sand, which are so serious an annoyance to the traveller in the *llanos* of America, the deserts of Africa and Asia, and the steppes of Asia.

"In coming from the sea-coast, you begin by climbing this first stage of the mountains of the interior, which, in the region I traversed, is not very elevated, since no snow falls there, and ice and hail are rare phenomena; moreover, a great part of the trees preserve their foliage all the year. But a little further westward, this is no longer the case on the more elevated summits. Proceeding towards the highest part of the *campos geracs*, you arrive at the chain of mountains which stretches along their surface, but which cannot be compared with the cordillera of the Andes of Spanish America: they present neither peaks covered

with perpetual snows, nor volcanoes. Those regions of South America which are destitute of wood, resemble each other only in respect of animated nature, and differ especially from the steppes of the old continent in the circumstance, that their various aboriginal inhabitants were found by the first European discoverers in the lowest stage of civilisation, subsisting entirely by hunting, while those of the old world were *nomades* (pastoral tribes), a condition of society which has never existed in America."*

The new world! Yet, for upwards of fifty centuries was this vast continent locked up in mysterious secresy from civilised man. All the operations of nature were carried on, during that long period, beneath the sun and stars of tropical skies;—vast rivers were forming for themselves new channels, and conquering new land from the ocean,—bays were being changed to lakes, and lakes to plains,—forests were springing up and crumbling to decay, or falling a prey to the lightning, their ashes supplying the soil of future forests,—and countless generations of the free tenants of these magnificent wilds were coming into existence and passing away; and of all these transactions, our half of the globe was as unconscious as if they had taken place in a remote planet. And in that hemisphere, there was no poet to sing of them, no historian to record them, no philosopher to interpret them. The only human eye that they ever met, was the unsteady, unintelligent glance of the polar savage or the wild hunter of the central plains. And to that scattered fragment of the human race, all that was passing in what called itself the world, all that makes up the history of man, was utterly unknown. The Assyrian, the Persian, the Grecian, the Roman empires, rose and fell without in the slightest degree affecting them. And this earth was made the theatre of the most stupendous transaction in the universe, without

* Prince Maximilian's Travels, vol. iii. pp. 99—104.

their ever hearing of the event,—if, indeed America had, at that period, received its first inhabitants. Had this new world been known to exist, the simple fact being handed down by tradition or discovered by revelation, while its situation, and productions, and inhabitants remained unknown, one can conceive with what intense curiosity the imagination would have dwelt upon the idea, and what various speculations would have been indulged respecting the moral condition of human beings in that world unknown. At length, the veil was lifted up, and discovered the other side of the earth, glowing in all the beauty of its first creation; but death was there, and the parent of death, and the hideous features of our degraded nature too evidently betrayed their affinity to the men of the old world. It might seem to be one reason that the knowledge of these regions was so long withheld, that the fall of man might be more strikingly exhibited there in contrast with the beauty of an earthly paradise. There, human nature is seen in her unsophisticated simplicity, uncorrupted by priestcraft and the artificial institutions of civilised society; and there, it has been established by indubitable testimony, man approaches nearest to the brute, or rather sinks below the brute, in feeding upon his fellow.

The line of coast, proceeding northward, from the mouth of the Rio Real in latitude 11° 38′ south, to that of the great river St. Francisco in latitude 10° 58′ south, an extent of about 26 leagues, with an average width of about forty leagues, forms

THE PROVINCE OF SEREGIPE D'EL REY.

It derives its name from the river Seregipe, by which it is intersected, and on which the capital St. Christovam

was first established.* Its conquest and colonisation were commenced in 1590, in consequence of royal orders transmitted to the government of Bahia, at the request, it is said, of the colonists in the neighbourhood of the Rio Real, who were infested at once by the Indians and by French pirates. It was granted to Christovam de Barros, the deputy-governor of Bahia, as the reward of his services in reducing the natives, and was for a long time considered as a district of Bahia, but began to have ouvidors about the year 1696. At that time, an insurrection broke out, headed by a few powerful colonists, who for some time set the governor-general at defiance, but were at length compelled to sue for pardon, and obtained it on condition of reducing the remaining Tupinambas, who still annoyed the settlers. This they in part effected, and the work was completed by the Jesuits. Having no natural advantages for commerce, this province has always been far behind the adjoining captaincies. Along its whole line of coast, there are no capes, islands, or ports, except those within the rivers, the bars of which are generally more or less dangerous, and afford passage only to smacks. The surface of the province is generally flat, there being scarcely a hill or mountain of any considerable elevation. The largest is the Serra Itabaianna, between the Rio Real and the Vazabarris, which, though thirty miles from the coast, is visible at a great distance from the sea. On its summit is a lake which is never dry, and the mountain is believed to be rich in gold. Cazal divides the province into eastern and western. The former, in consequence of its extensive woods, is called *Mattas;* the latter, which includes the larger portion of territory, has acquired, from the sterility

* Southey's Brazil, vol. i. p. 618. It received the name of St. Christovam in honour of Christovam de Barros, the first donatory. This city was destroyed by the Dutch in 1637.

of its soil, the denomination of *Agrestes:* it is for the most part stony, bare, and very deficient in water. A few small aldeias on the river St. Francisco, its northern boundary, are the only cultivated spots. In the eastern part, four settlements only have been dignified with the name of towns,* besides Seregipe or St. Christovam, which, being the capital, ranks as a city. After two removals, it is now well situated on an elevation near the river Paramopama, an arm of the Vazabarris, eighteen miles from the sea. Sumacas ascend to it, and take in sugar and cotton. It contains two convents, Franciscan and Carmelite; two chapels of Our Lady,—one for the mulattoes, and one for the blacks; a misericordia, a handsome town-house, and a large bridge; all built of stone; it has royal professors, and what is more important, plenty of good water. But the most populous and the busiest settlement in the whole province, not excepting the capital, is the *povoaçao* of Estancia, five leagues from the sea, on the river Piauhy, which falls into the Rio Real, by which sumacas ascend to it. None of the rivers are navigable for larger vessels, and the entrances of all are exceedingly dangerous. "These impediments in the way of commerce," remarks Mr. Southey, "have retarded the improvement of the people, and may in some degree explain why their manners should be more ferocious than those of the Pernambucans or the Bahians. At the latter end of the eighteenth century, an *ouvidor* in this captaincy, in less than two years, received information of more than two hundred murders; and since that time,

* These are, St. Amaro, situated one mile north of the confluence of the Seregipe and the Cotindiba; St. Luzia, near the river Guararema, eight miles above its junction with the Rio Real; Itabaianna, in the vicinity of the serra of that name; and Villa Nova de St. Antonio, on the St. Francisco, twenty five miles below Propiha or Urubu de Baixo, the chief place in the Agrestes.

twelve were committed in one parish in the course of one week. The inhabitants of Seregipe are of all shades of colour; and it has been observed that, of all classes, the mamalucoes are the longest lived."*

On the whole, this would appear to be one of the least attractive and valuable portions of this vast empire, although it lies between two of the most important captaincies; Bahia on the south, and, on the north, that on which we now enter—

THE PROVINCE OF PERNAMBUCO.

THIS province, which is separated by the river St. Francisco from Seregipe and Bahia on the south, and by the Carinhenha from Minas Geraes, touches on Goyaz on the west, and, on the north, on Paraiba, Seara, and Piauhy. It is esteemed one of the most flourishing parts of Brazil, containing more ports than any other province; and Recife, its capital, is inferior in commercial importance only to Rio and Bahia. This city, which, Mr. Southey remarks, "has not unaptly been called the Tripoli of the New World," has continued to be a place of the first importance from the time of the Dutch conquest; and no other city has derived such great and unequivocal benefit from the growth of the cotton trade. What is commonly called Pernambuco† comprehends the city of Olinda,‡ founded by Duarte Coelho Pereira, the first

* Southey's Brazil, vol. iii. pp. 798, 4. Henderson's Brazil, pp. 347—54.

† A corruption of Paranabuco, by which the Cahete Indians designated the port.

‡ *O linda*, oh! beautiful, from the exclamation which Duarte Coelho is said to have uttered on beholding it—"*O que linda situacam para se fundar huma villa!*" Oh, how fine a situation for founding a town.

donatory, about 1535, and the town of Recife,* built by the Dutch under Maurice of Nassau, and by them called Maurice town (Mauritius). This is a singular spot, situated on several sand-banks, divided by salt-water creeks and the mouths of two fresh-water rivers, connected by three bridges, and divided into as many parts;—Recife, properly so called, where are the castles of defence, the dock-yard, and the warehouses of the traders; St. Antonio, where are the government-house and the two principal churches, one for the white, and one for the black population; and Boa Vista, where the richer inhabitants live among their gardens, and where convents, churches, and the bishop's palace, give an air of importance to the very neat town around them. The appearance of the whole from the sea is thus described by Mr. Koster, who visited Pernambuco in 1809, and again in 1812, and to whom we are indebted for the chief part of our information with regard to this province.

"The land is low, and consequently not to be seen at any considerable distance; but, as we approached it, we distinguished the hill upon which stands the city of Olinda, a little to the northward, and, some leagues to the southward, the Cape of St. Agostinho. A nearer view discovered to us the town of St. Antonio do Recife, almost a-head with the shipping in front of it, the dreary land between it and Olinda, which is one league distant, and cocoa groves northward, as far as the eye can reach: southward of the town are also seen great numbers of cocoa-trees, woods, and scattered cottages. The situation of Olinda is the highest in the neighbourhood, and, though not very high, is still not despicable. Its appearance from the sea is most delightful: its white-washed churches and convents upon the tops and sides of the hill; its gar-

* That is, the Reef. It is in lat. 8° 14′ south; long. 35° 15′ west.

dens and trees, interspersed amongst the houses, afford a prospect of great extent, and hold out expectations of great beauty. The sands, which extend one league to the southward of it, are relieved by two fortresses erected upon them, and by the ships in the lower harbour. Then follows the town of Recife, with the appearance of being built in the water, so low is the sand-bank upon which it has been raised. The shipping immediately in front, partly conceal it; and the bold reef of rocks on the outside of these, with the surf dashing violently against and over it, gives to them the appearance of being ashore; and as no outlet is seen, they seem to be hemmed in. The small tower or fort at the northern end of the reef, however, soon claims attention, and points out the entrance. We approached the land rather to the southward of the town, and coasted, under very easy sail, at a short distance from the reef, waiting for a pilot. It was not yet noon; the sea was smooth, the sun was bright, and every thing looked pleasant. The buildings are all white-washed; the sun shone upon them, and gave to them a glittering silvery appearance.

"Nothing this day created so much astonishment on board our ship, amongst those who had not been before upon this coast, as the *Jungadas* sailing about in all directions. These are simply rafts of six logs, of a peculiar species of light timber, lashed or pinned together; a large latine sail; a paddle used as a rudder; a sliding keel let down between the two centre logs; a seat for the steersman; and a long forked pole, upon which is hung the vessel containing water, the provisions, &c. These rude floats have a most singular appearance at sea, no hull being apparent even when near them. They are usually managed by two men, and go closer to the wind than any description of vessel."

"The reef," says Mrs. Graham, "is certainly one of

the wonders of the world. It is scarcely sixteen feet broad at top; it slopes off more rapidly than the Plymouth break-water, to a great depth on the outside, and is perpendicular within to many fathoms. We approached the sandy beach between Recife and Olinda so nearly, that I thought we were going to land there; when coming abreast of a tower on a rock where the sea was breaking violently, we turned short round, and found ourselves within a natural break-water, heard the surf dashing without, and saw the spray, but we ourselves were sailing along smoothly and calmly, as if in a mill-pond. The rock of which the reef is formed, is said to be coral; but it is so coated with barnacle and limpet, that I could see nothing but the remainder of these shells for many feet down, and as deep into the rock as our hammers would break. It extends from a good way to the northward of Paraiba to Olinda,* where it sinks under water, and then rises abruptly at Recife, and runs on to Cape St. Augustine, where it is interrupted by the bold granite head that shoots through it into the ocean: it then reappears, and continues, interruptedly, towards the south. The breadth of the harbour here between the reef and the mainland, varies from a few fathoms to three quarters of a mile: the water is deep close to the rock, and there the vessels often moor. There is a bar at the entrance of the harbour, over which there is, in ordinary tides, sixteen feet of water, so that ships of considerable burden lie here. In 1816, the harbour was cleared and deepened, and particularly the bar. Here and there, a few inequalities at the top must formerly have annoyed the harbour in high

* Mr. Koster says, that it continues along the whole coast between Pernambuco and Maranham, in some parts running very near the shore, and remaining uncovered at low water, in other places receding from the land. There are numberless breaks through which the communication with the sea is laid open.

tides or strong winds; but Count Maurice remedied this, by laying huge blocks of granite into the faulty places, and has thus rendered the top level and the harbour safe at all times."

The town of Recife, as it appeared to Mr. Koster in 1810, is described as follows:—

"A narrow, long neck of sand stretches from the foot of the hill upon which Olinda is situated, to the southward. The southern extremity of this bank expands, and forms the site of that part of the town particularly called Recife, as being immediately within the reef. There is another sand-bank, also of considerable extent, upon which has been built the second division, called St. Antonio, connected with that already mentioned by means of a bridge. The third division of the town, called Boa Vista, stands upon the main-land to the southward of the other two, and is joined to them also by a bridge. The *recife*, or reef of rocks, runs in front of these sand-banks, and receives upon it the principal force of the sea, which, at the flow of the tide, rolls over it, but is much checked by it, and strikes the quays and buildings of the town with diminished strength. The greatest part of the extent of sand between Olinda and the town, which remains uncovered, is open to the sea, and the surf there is very violent. Buildings have only been raised within the protection of the reef. The tide enters between the bridges, and encircles the middle compartment. On the land side, there is a considerable expanse of water, having much the appearance of a lake, which becomes narrower towards Olinda, and reaches to the very streets of that place, thus facilitating the communication between the two towns. The view from the houses that look on to these waters, is very extensive and very beautiful: their opposite banks are covered with trees and white-washed cottages, varied by small open spaces and lofty cocoa-trees.

"The first division of the town is composed of brick houses, of three, four, and even five stories in height. Most of the streets are narrow, and some of the older houses in the minor streets are of only one story in height, and many of them consist only of the ground floor. The streets of this part, with the exception of one, are paved. In the square are the custom-house, in one corner, a long, low, and shabby building; the sugar-inspection, which bears the appearance of a dwelling-house; a large church, not finished; a coffee-house, in which the merchants assemble to transact their commercial affairs; and dwelling-houses. There are two churches in use, one of which is built over the stone arch-way leading from the town to Olinda, at which a lieutenant's guard is stationed. The other church belongs to the priests of the *Congregaçam da Madre de Deos*. Near to the gateway above mentioned, is a small fort, close to the water-side, which commands it. To the northward is the residence of the port-admiral, with the government timber-yards attached to it; these are small, and the work going on in them is very trifling. The cotton-market, warehouses, and presses, are also in this part of the town.

"The bridge which leads to St. Antonio has an arch-way at either end, with a small chapel built upon each; and at the northern arch is stationed a sergeant's guard of six or eight men. The bridge is formed in part of stone arches, and in part of wood: it is quite flat, and lined with small shops, which render it so narrow that two carriages cannot pass each other upon it.

"St. Antonio, or the middle town, is composed chiefly of large houses and broad streets; and if these buildings had about them any beauty, there would exist here a certain degree of grandeur; but they are too lofty for their breadth, and the ground-floors are appropriated to shops, warehouses, stables, and other purposes of a like

nature. The shops are without windows, and the only light they have is admitted from the door. There exists as yet very little distinction of trades: thus, all descriptions of manufactured goods are sold by the same person. Some of the minor streets consist of low and shabby houses. Here are the governor's palace, which was in other times the Jesuits' convent; the treasury; the town-hall and prison; the barracks, which are very bad; the Franciscan, Carmelite, and Penha convents, and several churches, the interiors of which are very handsomely ornamented, but very little plan has been preserved in the architecture of the buildings themselves. It comprises several squares, and has, to a certain degree, a gay and lively appearance. This is the principal division of the town.

"The bridge which connects St. Antonio with Boa Vista is constructed entirely of wood, and has upon it no shops, but is likewise narrow. The principal street of Boa Vista, which was formerly a piece of ground overflowed at high-water, is broad and handsome: the rest of this third division consists chiefly of small houses, and as there is plenty of room here, it extends to some distance in a straggling manner. Neither the streets of this part of the town nor of St. Antonio are paved. A long embankment has likewise been made, which connects the sand-bank and town of St. Antonio with the main-land at Affogados, to the south and west of Boa Vista. The river Capibaribe, so famous in Pernambucan history, discharges its waters into the channel between St. Antonio and Boa Vista, after having run for some distance in a course nearly east and west.

"Some few of the windows of the houses are glazed, and have iron balconies; but the major part are without glass, and of these the balconies are inclosed with lattice-work; and no females are to be seen, excepting the negro

slaves, which give a very sombre look to the streets. The Portuguese, the Brazilian, and even the mulatto women, in the middle ranks of life, do not move out of doors in the day-time. They hear mass at the churches before day-light, and do not again stir out, excepting in sedan-chairs, or in the evening on foot, when occasionally a whole family sally forth to take a walk."

Olinda does not answer to the beauty of its first appearance, and Mr. Koster was much disappointed on entering it, although still, he says, the city has many beauties, and the view from it is magnificent. "The streets are paved, but are much out of repair. Many of the houses are small, low, and neglected, and the gardens very little cultivated: indeed, the place has been deserted for the Recife. It is, however, the residence of the bishop, and the site of the ecclesiastical court, the seminary, (a public college, established by the Jesuits, intended principally to prepare students for the church,) several convents, and five churches; therefore, it is by no means desolate, though its general aspect betrays a degree of neglect." This was in 1810. Mrs. Graham found the city "in a melancholy state of ruin. All the richer inhabitants," she says, "have long settled in the lower town. The revenues of the bishopric being now claimed by the crown, and the monasteries suppressed for the most part, even the factitious splendour caused by the ecclesiastical courts and inhabitants is no more. The very college where the youths received some sort of education, is nearly ruined, and there is scarcely a house of any size standing. Olinda is placed on a few small hills, whose sides are in some directions broken down so as to present the most abrupt and picturesque rock-scenery. These are embosomed in dark woods that seem coeval with the land itself. Tufts of slender palms, here and there the broad head of an ancient mango, or the gigan-

tic arms of the wide-spreading silk-cotton tree, rise from out the rest in the near ground, and break the line of forest. Amidst these, the convents, the cathedrals, the bishop's palace, and the churches, of noble, though not elegant architecture, are placed in stations which a Claude or a Poussin might have chosen for them. Some stand on the steep sides of rocks, some on lawns that slope gently to the sea-shore: their colour is grey or pale-yellow, with reddish tiles, except here and there, where a dome is adorned with porcelain tiles of white and blue."*

"It is said," adds Mrs. Graham, "that the morals of the clergy here are most depraved: this is probably true. The very names of literature and science are here almost unknown." There was not one bookseller in Pernambuco at this period, and the attempt to set up even a newspaper had failed. But several papers are now published in Recife. "The friars," says Mr. Koster, "are not numerous, though far too much so. These useless beings amount to about 150 at Olinda, Recife, Iguaraçu, and Paraiba. But there are no nuns in the province, though, of the establishments called *recolhimentos* or retreats, three exist. The number of churches, chapels, and niches in the streets for saints, is quite preposterous. To these are attached a multitude of religious lay-brotherhoods, of which the members are merchants and other persons in trade, and some are composed of mulatto and free black people. Some of these continually beg for a supply of wax and other articles to be consumed in honour of their patron. Almost every day in the year, passengers

* Olinda, when burnt by the Dutch in 1631, is said to have contained 2,500 houses, and about 25,000 inhabitants. It was made an episcopal city in 1676, but has continued to decline as Recife has risen in prosperity, so that in 1810 the population had sunk to 4,000, and is now still less.

are importuned in the streets, and the inhabitants in their houses, by some of these people, and among others by the lazy Franciscan friars." In Recife, the Fathers of the Oratory, the Franciscans, and the Carmelites have each a convent; the bearded Italian Capuchins, and the Almoners of the Holy Land, each an *hospice:* there is also a recolhimento. The Jesuits' college is now the palace of the governor. Olinda contains four convents, Franciscan, Benedictine, Carmelite, and barefoot Carmelite; a recolhimento, and a misericordia; also, a botanic garden, " one of the institutions which have arisen from the removal of the court to South America, intended as a nursery for exotic plants.* Yet, with all these public institutions, neither the Portuguese nor the Dutch governors have provided the town with an aqueduct, water being still brought from the rivers by canoes, and sold; nor did Recife afford either inn or lodging-house, till, in 1815, an *Irishman* and his wife opened a house answering both these purposes.†

The three compartments of the town contained, in 1810, above 25,000 inhabitants,‡ and was increasing rapidly; new houses were building wherever space could be found. Olinda contained about 4000 inhabitants, making, according to Mr. Koster's estimate, a total of about 30,000. But, " according to the last census," says Mrs. Graham, who visited Pernambuco in 1821, " the population (in-

* The bread-fruit, the oriental pepper, and the large sugar-cane from Otaheite, were raised in this garden, and distributed to any persons who were willing and able to cultivate them.

† Koster, vol. i. p. 7.

‡ In 1810, Recife contained 1229 families, St. Antonio 2729, and Boa Vista 1433, which, on the usual estimate of five to a family, would make the population amount to 27,000; but Mr. Southey thinks, that even ten might be allowed to a family, the estimate of Cazal, which would give double that number,—an estimate obviously excessive.

cluding Olinda) was 70,000, of which not above a third are whites: the rest are mulattoes or negroes. The mulattoes are, generally speaking, more active, more industrious, and more lively than either of the other classes. They have amassed great fortunes, in many instances, and are far from backward in promoting the cause of independence in Brazil. Few even of the free negroes have become very rich. A free negro, when his shop or garden has repaid his care, by clothing him and his wife each in a handsome black dress, with necklace and armlets for the lady, and knee and shoe buckles of gold, to set off his own silk stockings, seldom toils much more, but is quite contented with daily food. Many, of all colours, when they can afford to purchase a negro, sit down exempt from further care: they make the negroes work for them, or beg for them, and, so as they may eat their bread in quiet, care little how it is obtained."

The Portuguese inhabitants, Mrs. Graham states, were extremely anxious to avoid intermarriage with the Brazilians. They "preferred giving their daughters and fortunes to the meanest clerk of European birth, rather than to the richest and most meritorious Brazilian." It is not to be wondered at, therefore, that the Pernambucans were peculiarly impatient of the Portuguese yoke. The jealousy between the two parties, at the period of Mrs. Graham's visit, had risen to the height of open political animosity. The militia and other native forces had revolted and taken possession of the Villa of Goiana, from whence they had proceeded to attack Pernambuco itself, but were repulsed by the royal troops with some loss. At length, an armistice was concluded, the terms of which were, that the deputies of "the patriots" should sit in the council, and take an equal share in the administration, leaving the governor, Luis do Rego, at the head of the military department till the arrival of the next despatches

from Lisbon. Mrs. Graham left Pernambuco in the middle of October, 1821. Before a month had elapsed, the Cortes of Lisbon had recalled Luis do Rego and all the European troops, had repented of that recal, countermanded it, and sent reinforcements. By the time they arrived, the captain-general had embarked, and the patriotic junta forbade the troops to land, sending the ships to Rio. Mrs. Graham admits, that there were many causes of particular grievance in this province.* The appropriation of so much of the church revenue by the Court of Lisbon had, in particular, tended to make patriots of the clergy. Commercial jealousies have no doubt powerfully contributed also to alienate the Pernambucans, as well from the government of Rio as from the mother country; and it would seem as if the Dutch had left behind them some seeds of republicanism that are not yet extinct.

The Inquisition has never been established in Brazil. In Pernambuco, however, Mr. Koster states, several priests presided, who were employed as its familiars; and instances have been known of persons being sent off under confinement to Lisbon, on charges cognizable by that infamous tribunal. But the ninth article of the treaty of friendship and alliance between the crowns of England and Portugal, signed at Rio in February 1810, stipulates, that the power of the Inquisition shall not be recognised in Brazil. "The sight of all others the most offensive to an Englishman," says this traveller, "is that of the criminals who perform the menial offices of the palace, the barracks, the prisons, and other public buildings. They are chained in couples, and each couple is followed by a

* Among other oppressive and vexatious imposts, Mr. Koster states, that a tax was levied at Pernambuco for lighting the streets of Rio de Janeiro, while those of Recife remained in total darkness!

soldier armed with a bayonet. They are allowed to stop at the shops, to obtain any trifle they may wish to purchase; and it is disgusting to see with what unconcern the fellows bear this most disgraceful situation." The prisons were in a very bad state, and there was one part of the civil administration of the province, which called loudly for redress. There is a small island off the coast of Rio Grande do Norte, about three leagues in length, called Fernando de Noronha,* to which are transported, for a term of years or for life, a great number of male criminals. "No females are permitted to visit the island. The garrison, consisting of about 120 men, is relieved yearly. It is a very difficult matter to obtain a priest to serve for a twelvemonth, as chaplain in the island. When the bishop is applied to by the governor, for a person of this calling, he sends some of his ecclesiastical officers in search of one; the persons of the profession, who are liable to be sent, conceal themselves, and the matter usually concludes by a young priest being literally pressed into the service. The vessel employed between Recife and the island, visits it twice during the same period, and carries provisions, clothing, and other articles, to the miserable beings who are compelled to remain there, and for the troops. I have conversed with persons who have resided upon it, and the accounts I have heard of the enormities committed there, are most horrible: crimes punished capitally or severely in civilised states, or which at least are held in general abhorrence, are here practised, talked of, publicly acknowledged, without shame, and without remorse. Strange it is, that the dreadful state of this place should have so long escaped the notice of the supreme government of

* Mr. Henderson says, about 250 miles east-north-east of Cape St. Roque. A detachment is maintained here professedly to impede a contraband trade.

Brazil. But the evil ends not here: the individuals who return to Pernambuco, cannot shake off the remembrance of crimes which have become familiar to them. The powers, likewise, conceded to the commandant, whose will is absolute, have oftentimes proved too great for due performance; punishment seldom follows. The most wanton tyranny may be practised almost without fear of retribution. The climate of the island is good, and the small portion of it admitting of cultivation, I have understood, from competent authority, to be of extraordinary fertility. It does not, however, afford any shelter for shipping."

There existed at this period no regular police in Recife: a military patrole paraded the streets during the night, at stated periods, but this was not of much service. There yet remains to be noticed, another abomination, not peculiar indeed to Pernambuco, but powerfully contributing, with other causes, to debase the minds and corrupt the morals of the inhabitants. "We had hardly gone fifty paces into Recife," says Mrs. Graham, "when we were absolutely sickened by the first sight of a slave-market. It was thinly stocked, owing to the circumstances of the town, which caused most of the owners of new slaves to keep them closely shut up in the *depot*. Yet, about fifty young creatures, boys and girls, with all the appearance of disease and famine consequent upon scanty food and long confinement in unwholesome places, were sitting and lying about among the filthiest animals in the streets. In one *depot*, I saw an infant of about two years old for sale. Provisions were now so scarce, that no bit of animal food ever seasoned the paste of mandioc flour which is the sustenance of slaves; and even of this, these poor children, by their projecting bones and hollow cheeks, shewed that they seldom got a sufficiency. Money also was so scarce, that a purchaser was not easily found; and one pang

more was added to slavery,—the unavailing wish of finding a master." On returning from a ride to Olinda, along the sand-bank which extends between that city and Recife, Mrs. Graham was startled at finding herself in the midst of a cemetery. "The dogs had already begun their work of abomination. I saw one," she says, "drag the arm of a negro from beneath the few inches of sand which his master had caused to be thrown over his remains. It is on this beach that the measure of the insults dealt to the poor negroes is filled. When the negro dies, his fellow-slaves lay him on a plank, and carry him to the beach, where, beneath high water-mark, they hoe a little sand over him. But, to the new negro, even this mark of humanity is denied. He is tied to a pole, carried out in the evening, and dropped upon the beach, where it is just possible that the surf may bear him away."*

Mr. Henderson was informed, that the white people were at one time also interred here. The English have now a burying-ground at St. Amaro, not far from Boavista.

The environs of Pernambuco are well-wooded, and have a fertile appearance, although the soil, Mr. Henderson says, is in a miserable state of cultivation. A large proportion of the surrounding country is in a wild state. Here and there are seen small patches of mandioc, with groves of cocoa-palm and other fruit-trees; but the general aspect demonstrates the absence of industry, and this in the immediate neighbourhood of a city containing a population of 70,000 souls, and with nearly a hundred vessels of different classes usually lying in its port! The roads leading into the interior, are very good for a few miles, though sandy, but soon begin to contract into narrow

* Graham's Journal, pp. 105, 107, 111.

bridle-ways. The rides from Recife to Ponta de Cho, a village seated on the margin of the Capibaribe, are very delightful. Various roads branch from Boavista, which meet in one about half way to that village; about every hundred yards occur elegant white houses enclosed in lofty walls, and many of the front entrances, consisting of a handsome portico, exceed, Mr. Henderson says, any thing in this style in the vicinity of Rio. The roads are partly bordered with lime hedges and fences formed of branches of the cocoa, high-waving groupes of which heighten the beauty of the landscape. At Ponta de Cho, the river opens, and the road runs for a short distance along its margin, on which stands a residence of the governor; it then leaves the river, and passes the village of Casa Forte, (celebrated for having been one of the scenes of contest between the Dutch and the Portuguese,) to Poço de Panela, two miles further,—a village pleasantly situated on the left bank of the river, where several English merchants have their residence.* Many neat houses occur all along this road. Mr. Koster found this picturesque little place quite full, not a hut untenanted; and, "as occurs at watering-places in England, families whose dwellings in town are spacious and handsome, regardless of inconvenience, come to reside here during the summer in very small cottages. Here the ceremonious manners of the town are thrown aside, and exchanged for an equal degree of freedom." At many of the Portuguese houses, he found the card-tables occupied at nine o'clock in the morning: when one person rose, another took his place; and thus, they were scarcely deserted except during the heat of the day. The river Capibaribe, which has its origin in the district of Cayriris

* The English establishments amounted, in 1820, to sixteen, and through their medium, the whole province was supplied with every species of English manufacture.

Velhos, about fifty leagues from the sea, discharges itself by two mouths, one within the Recife, the other at the *arraial* of Affogados, four miles to the south. It is navigable as far as Apepucos, half a league beyond the village of Monteiros and Poço de Panela. Its stream at Ponta de Cho, is rather narrower than the Thames at Richmond. In the hot weather of the Christmas holidays, its picturesque winding course is enlivened by innumerable canoes, bearing the Pernambucan gentry to their summer retreats, and presents altogether a delightful prospect. At Caxanga, another village near its banks, there is a chalybeate spring. The source of the Capibaribe is stated to be brackish, and the inhabitants of Recife drink the water chiefly of the Biberibe, collected into a reservoir at Olinda.

The province of Pernambuco is divided by the river Pajehu, a tributary of the St. Francisco, into two parts. The eastern canton, or *ouvidoria*, is subdivided into three comarcas; northern, central, and southern, the respective head towns of which are Olinda, Recife, and Alagoas. Few of the other towns are of any consideration. Alagoas, (properly Magdalena,) so called from its being on the borders of the lake Manguaba, is a place of some commerce, and contains a church, three chapels, two convents, Franciscan and Carmelite, and two orders of devout women. The towns of Maceyo, Porto de Pedras, and Penedo, in this comarca, were created such by an edict as recent as December, 1815. The comarca of Recife contains only three small towns besides the capital. Olinda comprises four, among which are the somewhat considerable towns of Goiana and Iguarassu. The latter, distant from Recife seven leagues to the northward, and two from the sea, is one of the most ancient towns of the province. It is thus described by Mr. Koster:—

"Iguarassu is partly situated upon a hill, and partly in

the plain below, where a rivulet runs, and a stone bridge has been built, as the tide reaches this spot, and would render the communication difficult. The place plainly denotes that it has enjoyed greater prosperity than it at present has to boast of: many of the houses are of two stories, but they are neglected, and some of the small cottages are in decay and ruin. The streets are paved, but are much out of repair, and grass grows in many of them. It contains several churches, one convent, and a *recolhimento*, or retreat for females, a town-hall, and a prison. Its affluence proceeded formerly from the weekly cattle-fair, which was held upon a plain in the vicinity; but this has now for some years past been removed to the neighbourhood of Goiana.

"Iguarassu has many white inhabitants, several shops, a good surgeon, who was educated in Lisbon, and it is the resort of the plantations, to the distance of several leagues, for the embarkation of their sugar-chests, and for the purchase of some articles of necessity. The town contains about eight hundred inhabitants, reckoning the scattered cottages in the outskirts. The only regular inn of which the country has to boast, is established here, for the convenience of passengers between Recife and Goiana."*

The high road to the Sertam leads from Iguarassu, along a flat, sandy track to Goiana, distant fifteen leagues from Recife,† and four from the sea. This town, one of the largest and most flourishing in the captaincy, is

* Koster, vol. i. p. 68. The lower part of this town is the site of a siege which, in its infancy, this settlement sustained against the savages. See Southey's History, vol. i. p. 55.

† Mr. Henderson makes it sixty miles north-west of Olinda, which must be an error. Mr. Koster reached it by one day's journey. Two leagues beyond Iguarassu, is the village of Pasmado, containing between 3 and 400 inhabitants; and beyond the river Araripe, Mr. Koster rode through the hamlets of Bû and Fontainhas.

situated on the banks of a river of the same name, which here bends so considerably as almost to surround the town.* The streets are broad, but unpaved; the houses, with a few exceptions, of only one story. It contains a church, several hermitages, a Carmelite convent, and a misericordia, and has a population of about 5000. Several shops are established here, and the commerce with the interior is considerable. In the vicinity are many fine sugar plantations, and some of the best lands in the province. A great quantity of cotton also is exported, and there is a large cattle-fair on Thursdays. The district of the town is supposed to contain upwards of 20,000 inhabitants, with some twenty hermitages or chapels. The planters have the advantage of water-carriage to Recife, as the river is one of the largest for many leagues either to the north or the south, and is influenced by the tide even to a short distance above the town. Higher up, the river overflows its banks in the rainy season to a great extent.† About fifteen leagues from Recife is Limoeiro, a large and thriving town, with a weekly market, containing, in 1812, about 600 inhabitants, and increasing daily. It stands on the right bank of the Capibaribe. About thirty miles below, on the same river, is Pau do Alho; and, still nearer to the capital, Nazareth, or Lagoa d'Anta, both places of considerable trade, with a weekly market.‡

* Mr. Henderson describes it as situated on low ground between the river Capibari-mirim, which washes it on the north, and the Tracunhaen, or Goiana, on the south, a little more than a league above their confluence.

† Koster, vol. i. p. 72. Southey, vol. iii. p. 772. Henderson, p. 370.

‡ Limoeiro and Pau d'Alho were erected into townships in 1812, at the same time as the villages of St. Antonio on Cape St. Augustine, and St. Antam,—a sure sign of the increase of population. Mr. Henderson makes Limoeiro thirty miles above Pau d'Alho, but Mr. Koster, in his map, places the latter to the north-east of Limoeiro, at a distance from the Capibaribe, and Nazareth in the situation of Pau d'Alho.

"These market days," Mr. Koster says, "seldom pass without some murders being committed, or at least many wounds and blows being given; but the markets of Nazareth or Lagoa d'Anta are those which are particularly famed for the disturbances that usually take place there. These became so considerable at one time, that the governor found it necessary to issue orders for a patrole to keep the peace on market days."

Eight leagues to the northward of Recife is the island of Itamaraca, one of the oldest settlements in Brazil, and formerly a distinct captaincy.* It was taken by the Dutch in 1633, who built here the fort which they called Fort Orange; and in 1637, they deliberated whether or not the seat of government should be removed to the island.† The plan was overruled, but Mr. Koster thinks that the island possesses many advantages of which Recife cannot boast. "The port of Itamaraca may not admit of vessels of so much burthen as the Poço harbour of Recife, but the former is much more safe even than the Mosquiero port. If Brazil were to be at war with any naval power, Recife might be destroyed with ease; whereas, if a town had been erected upon the mainland opposite to the island, or upon the inside of the island, it could not be molested by shipping, for it would be necessary that a vessel should enter the channel, before she could bring her guns to bear. Besides this advantage, Itamaraca and the neighbouring shores enjoy those of wood and water in abundance, in the latter of which Recife is particularly deficient. In 1645, Joam Fernandes Vieira, the principal hero of the Pernambucan war, attacked the island, but did not succeed in dislodging the Dutch. The Portuguese again attempted to regain possession of it in 1646.

* See vol. i. p. 16.

† Southey's Brazil, vol. i. pp. 476, 489, 540.

They crossed over at Os Marcos, the shallowest part of the channel; they did not gain their point entirely, but the Dutch abandoned all their other posts to retire into the fort, which was not surrendered to the Portuguese until the expulsion of the Dutch in 1654.

"The island of Itamaraca, which is in length about three leagues, and in breadth about two, is situated at the distance of eight leagues to the northward of Recife, and is entirely separated from the mainland by a channel of unequal width, varying from one league to half a mile. The island does not contain any stream of water, but, in the neighbourhood of the town, water gushes from the hill wherever it is dug for. That which is obtained from the springs in the neighbourhood of Pillar, is not, however, good. Itamaraca is, perhaps, the most populous part of the province of Pernambuco, taken as a whole, the immediate vicinity of Recife excepted. It contains three sugar-mills, which are well stocked with negroes; and many free persons likewise reside upon the lands belonging to them.* Besides the lands attached to these works, there are other considerable tracks, which are subdivided among a great number of persons of small property. The shores of the island are planted with cocoa-trees, among which are thickly scattered the straw cottages of fishermen; and oftentimes are to be seen respectable white-washed dwellings, which are possessed by persons whose way of life is frugal, and yet easy. The salt-works upon the island are likewise one great source of its wealth; these are formed upon the sands which are overflowed by the tide at high-water.

"The long village of Pillar, situated upon the eastern side of the island, is, at the present day, the principal set-

* In the year 1630, the island contained three and twenty sugar-works. In the time of the Dutch, it produced the best grapes in Brazil, but the vine is now neglected in the island.

tlement, although the town of Conception, upon the south-east side, claims seniority. But its better times are gone by; its situation being considered as inconvenient, others are preferred; and if the parish church did not stand here, the place would shortly be deserted. It has now a desolate, neglected appearance. Its site is the summit of the south-east point of a high hill which rises almost immediately from the water's edge. The harbour is good, and the entrance is commanded by an old fort, which is much out of repair; the garrison is scanty, and without discipline. The entrance to the port is formed by an opening in the reef of rocks which runs along the whole of this part of the coast."

In some parts of the island, "the pest of Pernambuco," and indeed of Brazil, the large red ant, has fairly driven the planters out of their possessions. "Many individuals of the lower classes, first obtaining leave from the proprietor, have attempted to rear crops of mandioc and maize upon them; but their exertions have seldom enabled them to prevent the plantations from being destroyed. Huts are to be seen, out of which the inhabitants have been driven by these tormentors: the shelter which the roofs afford, is convenient to the ants, and under them they like to form the chief entrances to their cities. The hillocks under which they had formed their nests, were innumerable. Some of these were four feet in height, and ten or twelve in circumference: others were of less dimensions, and some of them might be larger.

"Regarding Itamaraca, there exists the following adage, 'What is it that persecutes thee, island? The being an island, the ants, and Guedes.'* In other words, the inconvenience occasioned by being obliged to cross the channel from the mainland; the ants, which

* *Que te persegue, Ilha? Ilha, formiga, Guedes.*

sufficiently explain for themselves; and Guedes: these were a family of unquiet spirits who resided in the island, and kept it in perpetual turbulence from their quarrels. The remains still exist; but now they are good and peaceable subjects."*

No province has so great a number of ports as Pernambuco, but the generality of them are capable of admitting only small craft. The principal one besides Recife and Catuama (the northern entrance to the channel of Itamaraca), is that of Tamandare, ten leagues south-west of Cape St. Augustine, which Mr. Henderson states to be the best of the whole, being "in the form of a bay, within a river so called. It is securely defended by a large fort, and is capable of receiving a fleet, being four and five fathoms deep at the entrance, and six within."† The same writer mentions a beautiful bay called Cururippe, sheltered by a reef, and capable of receiving large ships: there are two entrances, but the anchorage is indifferent. The Cururippe discharges itself into the sea twenty-eight miles north-east of the St. Francisco. Cape St. Augustine is the only promontory on this part of the coast, and is the most eastern land of South America: it is in latitude 8° 26′ south. It has two forts, each of which defends a small port, where vessels of an inferior class can anchor.

The western part of the province is much more extensive than the maritime district, but is very thinly inhabited, being for the most part dry and sterile, without any other rain than falls in thunder showers; and from the town of Penedo to the bar of Rio Grande, which travellers by the windings of the river compute at 500 miles, there does not flow towards the St. Francisco a single

* Koster, vol. ii. pp. 3—6, 9, 24.

† Yet, in the list of rivers, the Tamandare is not named, nor does Mr. Koster mention either a river or a port of that name. The mouth of the Ipojuca is perhaps meant.

stream in the dry season.* The surface is very unequal, in parts mountainous. The serra of Borborema is described as the most majestic in Brazil. It commences near the sea in the province of Rio Grande do Norte, and traverses that of Paraiba from north-east to south-west; it then turns to the west, separating that province from Pernambuco, and from Seara; and, lastly, inclines to the northward, dividing Pernambuco from Piauhy, varying frequently its altitude and name. In some parts, it is rocky and barren, but the principal part is covered with beautiful forests. The whole of this immense territory was included, up to 1810, in the jurisdiction of the ouvidor of Jacobina: it is now called the ouvidoria of the sertam of Pernambuco. It contains only six towns, several of which date their creation no further back than 1810. The largest of these is situated at the confluence of the Rio Grande with the St. Francisco, and is called Barra do Rio Grande. It contains no fewer than 1036 families and one church. The passage of the St. Francisco, at this point, where it is a mile wide, is much frequented, being in the line from Piauhy and the whole intermediate sertam to Bahia and Minas. The magnificent river last mentioned, to which reference has so repeatedly been made, is the largest that enters the sea between the Amazons and the Plata.† After receiving the Carinhenha, on the borders of the comarca of Paracatu, it is joined by only five streams of any importance. These are the Rans, the Parimirim, and the Verde on the right, the Correntes and Rio Grande, both originating in the serra of Paranan, on the left. Below the conflu-

* So few are the rivers which the St. Francisco receives from the arid *sertoens* of Bahia and Pernambuco, that the river, as Mr. Southey suggests, probably loses more water by evaporation there, than is supplied by all the confluents in that part of its course.

† See p. 104 of this volume.

ence of the latter river, it bends towards the east, and then to the east-south-east, to the aldeia of Vargem Redonda, where the navigation terminates from above. Its margins have hitherto been flat, and in some parts so low, that at the season of floods they are inundated for more than seven miles. But now, the lateral lands begin to rise, the channel becomes narrower, and the current is rapidly impelled between rocks, with many falls, to the small aldeia of Caninde, seventy miles below Vargem, and the boundary of the navigation from the ocean.* The most interesting of these falls, is that of Paulo Affonso, the spray of which Cazal affirms to be visible from the mountains six leagues distant. Beyond Caninde, the river continues for ten miles to run between stony banks a hundred fathoms in height, its channel not exceeding a sling's throw in width, to the mouth of the Jacare, where its elevated and rugged banks terminate. "Its bed in this part is overspread with cleft reefs, appearing like the relics of a majestic sluice or dock." Three leagues below, near the small island of Ferro, the margins begin to diminish in elevation, and the river to augment in width, presenting sandy shoals or islets, the resort of herons and other water-fowl. At Penedo, 100 miles below Caninde, the small range of hills that skirts the left bank of the river, terminates; and two miles below Villa Nova, the right bank also becomes flat. The river here begins to divide its course, forming a great number of low, wooded islands, which are covered by the inundations. This vast river, which is so deep in the interior, at length disembogues by two shallow mouths: the principal one, which is the more northerly, though

* All produce descending the river below the falls, is disembarked at Vargem Redonda, and transmitted by means of oxen to Caninde.

nearly two miles in width, has not even depth enough to allow of the entrance of sumacas, except at high-water.*

A hundred miles below the confluence of the Rio Grande, and about 350 from the mouth of the St. Francisco, stands the town of Pilaõ Arcado, the second place in importance in the sertam. It contains a church, recently built, and about 300 families; their houses are of earth and wood. The population of the district is stated by Mr. Henderson at 5000 souls. Maize, mandioc, and melons are cultivated on the margins of the river, where the soil is doubtless an alluvial deposite, as the land all around is wild and sterile, fit only for the breeding of cattle, who are subject to "the horrible mortality produced by frequent droughts." The chief article of trade is the salt obtained from the neighbourhood of the town. "There are a great many small lakes at various distances from the river, all more or less brackish, upon the margins of which the salt formed by the ardent heat of the sun appears like hoar-frost. The water of these lakes, and even soft water, filtered through a contiguous earth in wooden vessels, or leather finely perforated and exposed on boards to the heat of the weather, in eight days crystallises, yielding a salt as white as marine salt."† Although upon appropriated land, these salt lakes, like the auriferous soils, are considered as common property, of which any persons may avail themselves.

O Penedo (the rock), the port of the St. Francisco, is seven leagues from its mouth. It contained, in 1806, about 300 families, chiefly European Portuguese, and, after having for a century and a half continued poor and unprogressive, had at that time become a busy and flourishing place. Instead of its old wooden hovels, substan-

* In fact, it is navigated by larger boats in the upper, than in the lower country.

† Henderson, p. 379.

tial and handsome stone houses were erected; and, besides the mother church, there were five hermitages, and a Franciscan convent. Mr. Henderson states the population of its district at 11,500. The river here is a mile in width. It rises only three feet at spring tides; but the town is exposed to injury when the freshes come down; and one tremendous flood is remembered, when the water rose twenty feet.

In the time of the Dutch, cultivation was found only in patches along the whole coast from Recife to the Potengi, and extended inland seldom more than from twelve to fifteen miles, never more than one or two and twenty. Even up to the close of the eighteenth century, Mr. Southey states, "there were no other inhabitants upon the banks of the Francisco, in the upper and middle parts of its long course, than a few fishermen, who subsisted upon what they could catch, and carried on a little trade in salt; and scattered vagabonds, rather more numerous, who, having fled from the private vengeance which they deserved, or the public justice which they had provoked too long, resorted to these *sertoens*, and supported themselves by stealing cattle from the fazendas." But now, towns and villages are rapidly rising in the maritime district, and inhabitants are every where thinly scattered over the interior. These *sertanejos* (as the inhabitants of the sertam are called) would doubtless have relapsed into utter barbarism, but for the civilising influence of commerce, extending rapidly to all parts from the coast. "Owing to this influence, decencies and even comforts are found upon the cattle-estates in this part of Brazil, which would be looked for in vain among the wretches of Paraguay and the Plata. The great agents of improvement among these people are the pedlars, who travel about with the calico of the country, earthenware, small kegs of rum, Irish butter, tobacco and snuff, sugar-

cakes (*rapaduras*), spurs, bits, and other gear for horses, (saddles excepted, which the *sertanejos* make for themselves,) and even trinkets of gold and silver. They seldom receive payment in cash, but take hides, cheese, and cattle of all kinds, which they convey to the coast, or to some convenient market, and exchange for goods, thus carrying on their trade almost without money."* Mr. Koster was informed of one class of itinerants of a rather extraordinary description, who travel with spiritual wares.

"Certain priests obtain a license from the bishop (of Pernambuco), and travel through these regions with a small altar, constructed for the purpose, of a size to be placed upon one side of a pack-saddle; and they have with them all the apparatus for saying mass. Thus, with a horse conveying the necessary paraphernalia, and a boy to drive it, who likewise assists in saying mass, and another horse on which the priest himself rides, and carries his own small portmanteau, these men make, in the course of the year, between 150*l.* and 200*l.*—a large income in Brazil, but hardly earned, if the inconveniences and privations which they must undergo to obtain it, are taken into consideration. They stop and erect the altar wherever a sufficient number of persons who are willing to pay for the mass, is collected. This will sometimes be said for three or four shillings; but, at other times, if a rich man takes a fancy to a priest, or has a fit of extreme devotion upon him, he will give eight or ten *mil-reis* (two or three pounds); and it does happen, that one hundred *mil-reis* are received for saying a mass, but this is very rare;—at times an ox or a horse, or two or three, are given. These men have their use in the world: if this custom did not exist, all form of worship would be completely out of the reach of the inhabitants of many districts; or, at any rate,

* Southey, vol. iii. p. 773, 775.

they would not be able to attend more than once or twice in the course of a year; for it must be remembered, that there is no church within twenty or thirty leagues of some parts. Besides, where there is no law, nor real, rational religion, any thing is better than nothing. They christen and marry, and thus preserve these necessary forms of religion, and prevent a total forgetfulness of the established rules of civilised society; a sufficient link is kept up to make any of these people, if they removed into more populous districts, conform to received ideas."*

The home dress of a *sertanejo* consists merely of a shirt and drawers. Abroad, he wears half-pantaloons or leggings, of tanned, but undressed leather, tied tight round the waist; a tanned goat-skin over the breast, fastened behind by strings; a leathern jacket, generally thrown over one shoulder; a leathern hat, very shallow in the crown and with a narrow brim; slip-shod slippers of the same rusty-coloured leather, and iron spurs fastened upon his naked heels. A sword and knife are his constant weapons, and frequently he carries a large pistol. Upon a journey, he usually takes a hammock and a change of linen, with, perhaps, a pair of nankeen pantaloons, rolled up in a piece of red baize, and fastened to the saddle. In his saddle-bags, he carries his farinha and dried meat, a flint and steel, tobacco and a spare pipe. The usual colour of a *sertanejo* is a dark brown, the complexion even of those who are born white, soon becoming as completely tanned as the dress they wear. The home dress of the women consists of a shift and calico petticoat, sometimes dyed red, no stockings, often no shoes; but they never go abroad barefoot, nor without a large piece of white cloth thrown over the head and shoulders. Children of both sexes usually go naked till they approach the age of puberty. There are

* Koster, vol. i. p. 132—3.

no wild cattle in these *sertoens;* but kine are so numerous that the people live too much upon meat, eating it thrice a-day. They eat with it *piram*, a paste made of mandioc flour, rice occasionally, or maize, and in default of all these, the dough made of the pith of the *carnaûba* palm. They make no use of any green herbs whatsoever, deeming sallads fitter food for beasts than for men, and cultivate few fruits except the water-melon. The wild fruits are numerous. They milk both cows and goats, and make cheese, which is excellent when new, but soon becomes tough: their skill in the dairy extends no further. Knives and forks are superfluities of which they have not yet acquired the use; but water is served both before and after meals. Hammocks serve them as beds, and the ground instead of chairs. "The women seldom appear, and when they are seen, do not take any part in the conversation. If they are present at all, when the men are talking, they stand, or squat down upon the ground, in the door-way leading to the interior of the house, and merely listen. The morals of the men are by no means strict, and when this is the case, it must give an unfavourable bias, in some degree, to those of the women; but the *sertanejo* is very jealous, and more murders are committed, and more quarrels entered into on this score, by ten-fold, than on any other. These people are revengeful; an offence is seldom pardoned, and, in default of law, of which there is scarcely any, each man takes it into his own hands. This is, without any sort of doubt," continues Mr. Koster, "a dreadful state of society, and I do not by any means pretend to speak in its justification; but, if the causes of most of the murders committed and beatings given are inquired into, I have usually found that the receiver had only obtained what he deserved. Robbery in the *sertam* is scarcely known; the land is, in favourable years, too plentiful to afford temptation, and, in seasons of distress for food,

every man is for the most part equally in want. Subsistence is to be obtained in an easier manner than by stealing in so abundant a country, and where both parties are equally brave and resolute; but, besides these reasons, I think the *sertanejos* are a good race of people. They are tractable, and might easily be instructed, excepting in religious matters: in these they are fast riveted, and such is their idea of an Englishman and a heretic, that it was on some occasions difficult to make them believe that I, who had the figure of a human being, could possibly belong to that non-descript race. They are extremely ignorant, few of them possessing even the commonest rudiments of knowledge. Their religion is confined to the observance of certain forms and ceremonies, and to the frequent repetition of a few prayers, faith in charms, relics, and other things of the same order. The *sertanejos* are courageous, generous, sincere, and hospitable: if a favour is begged, they know not how to deny it; but, if you trade with them either for cattle or aught else, the character changes, and then they wish to outwit you, conceiving success to be a piece of cleverness of which they may boast."*

There were at one period, in the province of Pernambuco, a set of ruffians, calling themselves *valentoens*, or bravoes, men of all castes, whose whole business consisted in seeking opportunities of quarrelling, and who used for this purpose to attend all fairs and festivals. They considered themselves as privileged to revenge their own and their friends' injuries, and endeavoured to intimidate all others who might wish to create disturbances, not allowing any quarrel in which they were not concerned. "They would take their station at a cross-way, and compel all passengers to take off their hats and dismount, or fight as the alternative. A struggle with one of these desperadoes

* Koster, vol. i. pp. 227—234, 243.

armed with sword and knife, was more perilous than the roughest encounter of a knight with spear and shield. They trained dogs, of extraordinary size and activity, to be as savage as themselves, yet in such obedience that they would drink rum at the command of their masters. They wore green beads round their necks, which were believed by the credulous to have the virtue of rendering them invulnerable." So many of them, however, came to their deserved end, that, towards the close of the last century, the race became extinct.*

The state of the slaves in this province has already been noticed in the general description of Brazil.† It forms the most favourable trait, perhaps, in the Brazilian character. "Slavery," remarks Mr. Southey, "has mitigations in Brazil, which are unknown in the British colonial islands. The Brazilians have guilt enough to answer for on that

* Mr. Koster relates the following anecdote of one of these bravoes. The transaction occurred at a short distance from Jaguaribe, about thirty years ago:—"A man of large property being much provoked at some outrage which a *valentoen* (who was a white man) had committed, had said that when he met the man, he would horsewhip him. This was repeated to the outlaw; and shortly afterwards, they met accidentally in one of the narrow paths in the neighbourhood. The *valentam* was well armed with musket, sword, and knife: he requested the gentleman to stop, as he had something to say to him. The outlaw asked him for a pinch of snuff, and then offered his own box, from which a pinch was in like manner taken. He then mentioned the injurious words which had been repeated to him. The unfortunate offender directly imagined what would follow, and therefore set spurs to his horse; but the road was without any bend for some distance. The *valentam* knelt down upon one knee, and fired with the effect which he wished for. He quietly walked on along the same road, telling the whole story of his meeting at the first village through which he passed. This man was at last taken, tried, and hanged at Bahia, through the very great exertions of the brother of the person whom he had murdered. He could not be executed at Pernambuco, because he was a white man."—Koster, vol. i. p. 399.

† Vol. i. p. 93.

score, but they have never entertained the infamous opinion, that the Africans are incapable of feeling the affections, and observing the moral and religious relations of the marriage state. In this part of Brazil, they have universally endeavoured to make their slaves as good Christians as themselves." Still, it is slavery, with its inseparable concomitants, moral degradation and political danger.

The river Goiana, which falls into the sea nine miles to the north of the island of Itamaraca, separates Pernambuco from

THE PROVINCE OF PARAIBA.

This province comprehends about two thirds of the old captaincy of Itamaraca. It has between eighteen and nineteen leagues of coast, and runs back about sixty leagues, being bounded, to the westward, by Seara. It derives its name from the river Paraiba, or Parahyba, which, originating in the Serra do Jabitaca in Cayriris Velhos, not far from the source of the Capibaribe, runs to the north-east, and discharges itself into the Atlantic by two mouths on either side of the island of St. Bento. The port is capacious and secure. Vessels of 150 tons can pass the bar; sumacas can ascend to the capital, ten miles from its mouth; and canoes, as far as the town of Pilar do Taypu, forty miles higher. When the Dutch took possession of this captaincy in 1634, it contained only 700 families and twenty *engenhos*. In 1775, the population was estimated at 52,000. In 1812, it exceeded 122,000, of whom 17,000 were slaves, 8,000 free blacks, 28,000 free mulattoes, and 3,400 civilised Indians; there were no wild natives. This is a considerable population for Brazil, especially as two thirds of the whole surface are deemed (but Mr. Southey says, very erroneously) incapable of any kind of culture. The city of Paraiba, (named by the Dutch, Frederica,) bears marks, however,

of decay, having been deprived of a considerable portion of its commerce by Recife. It contained, in 1810, between 2,000 and 3,000 inhabitants, a mother church, five hermitages or chapels, three convents, Franciscan, Carmelite, and Benedictine, a misericordia, and two fountains. The convents, though large buildings, were all three almost uninhabited; the first having but four or five friars, the second but two, and the third but one. The governor resided in what had been the Jesuits' college. The principal street is broad and well paved; the houses mostly of one story; but some have glass windows, and a few are spoken of as handsome buildings. The lower town, which consists of small houses, is situated, Mr. Koster states, upon the borders of a spacious basin, or lake, formed by the junction of three rivers, which discharge their waters into the sea by one considerable stream. These rivers appear to be the Paraiba with its confluents, the Guarahu, and the small river Unhaby. "The banks of the basin," he adds, "are covered with mangroves, as in all the salt-water rivers of this country; and they are so close and thick, that there seems no outlet. I did not follow the river down to the sea, but I understand that there are in it some fine islands, with good land, quite uncultivated." One of these has since been cleared, and some salt-works formed upon it. Paraiba lies out of the road from the *sertam* to Recife; that is, out of the direct way from the towns upon the coast further north; the inhabitants of the interior will, therefore, make for Recife, rather than Paraiba, as the more extensive market for their produce. The lands of the captaincy are, for the most part, Mr. Koster says, rich and fertile; but so decided a preference is given to plantations nearer to Recife, that those of Paraiba are to be purchased at a much lower price. The sugar of this province is reckoned equal to that of any part of Brazil.

An Englishman, a Scotchman, and an Irishman had recently established themselves here, in 1820, in connexion with some merchants at Pernambuco, by whose means it was probable that the trade of this place would be revived and extended. The exports of sugar at one time exceeded 900 chests annually, but had sunk, in 1819, to less than half that quantity. The cultivation of cotton had, however, been rapidly increasing, the exports, in 1806, being only 9,000 bags, while, in 1820, they were upwards of 20,000. The cotton-plant is said to endure drought better than the cane; and this circumstance, together with the immense demand occasioned by the cotton-mills of Great Britain, is assigned as the reason for the diminution in the cane-plantations.

Mr. Koster travelled to Paraiba from Recife by way of Goiana. The road between Goiana and Paraiba, a distance of thirteen leagues, presents nothing particularly interesting. The hills are steep, but not high; woods, plantations, and cottages are the only objects. In returning, he followed another road, by the sea-shore, which made the distance twenty-two leagues. Great part of this extent of coast is uninhabited, but, wherever the land is low, and the surf not violent, a few cottages are found, and the banks of the rivers are not entirely destitute of inhabitants. The streams, when the action of the tide ceases, all become insignificant, and most of them quite dry. Within three leagues of Goiana, he passed through Alhandra, an Indian village, seated on the Capibaribe, containing about 600 inhabitants, some of them mamalucoes and mestizoes, who are cultivators and fishermen.

Besides the capital, this province contains only seven towns (including Pilar and Alhandra) in the eastern part, with a few arraials, and two in the western part. All these are inconsiderable. Villa da Rainha, commonly

called Campinha Grande, stands in an extensive plain 120 miles north-west of the capital, near a lake which supplies the inhabitants with water. Being in the road to the *sertam*, it is a great thoroughfare. In seasons of drought, the lake is dry, and the inhabitants are obliged to fetch their water upwards of six miles. The river Mamanguape, which falls into the sea about ten miles north of Point Lucena, but is dry in summer a few miles up, gives its name to a settlement near its banks, which, though not ranked with the towns of the province, yet, as not unfrequently happens, is larger than most of the places dignified with that title. It contains about 600 inhabitants, and being a convenient stage between Rio Grande and Goiana, is a thriving place. A day's journey from this place, is the small hamlet of Cunhahu, the scene of a memorable massacre committed by the Dutch, and of a signal victory obtained over them by Camaram; it gives name to one of the largest estates in this part of Brazil, belonging to the Maranham branch of the Albuquerque family, which extends fourteen leagues along the road from Recife to Natal. The owner had recently purchased, at the time of Mr. Koster's visit, another large estate adjoining; and his lands for breeding cattle in the *sertam*, were supposed to be from thirty to forty leagues in extent. Here he lived quite in feudal state, and being the colonel of the militia cavalry of Rio Grande, might be considered as having the whole district under his command.

Some leagues to the southward of Cunhahu, is a place called *Os Marcos* (the boundaries),—"a deep dell inhabited by runaway negroes and criminals: the paths of the dell are intricate, and when once a man has taken up his residence here, it is impossible to dislodge him." At this place, as its name indicates, commences

THE PROVINCE OF RIO GRANDE DO NORTE.

THE original name of the river, which has this adjunct to distinguish it from the Rio Grande of the south, is the Potengi,—a much more specific and convenient designation for the province itself. Pursuing the road from Recife and Goiana, at five leagues from Cunhahu, are the village and valley of Papari, described by Mr. Koster as a most delightful situation. The whole of the valley is cultivated, and when every other part of the surrounding country is burnt up with drought, and the high sandy lands are rendered quite barren, this spot retains its full verdure, and seems to laugh at all around. Though at the distance of three or four leagues from the sea, the salt-water lake of Groahyras extends to it, so that its inhabitants have the fish brought to their own doors. The tide enters the lake, by the outlet or river called Tayreyry: it is consequently never dry, even when the fresh springs which run into it fail. The district contains about 300 inhabitants widely scattered over it. Between three and four leagues further is the Indian villa of St. Joze, containing about 200 inhabitants, situated on a dry, sandy soil, and apparently falling to decay. A few leagues beyond this place, the road passes over a succession of dismal sand-hills; and the whole country between St. Joze and the capital of the province, is not only uninhabited, but uninhabitable. The distance, according to Cazal, is nearly thirty miles; the rate of travelling, about two miles within the hour. The sand-hills are perpetually changing their situations and forms, and the high winds raise the sand in clouds, which renders the road dangerous when they prevail. The sand is white and very fine, so that the horses sink up to the knees at every step; and it is so light as to prevent almost all vegeta-

tion. The scene is desolate and dreary in the extreme. The whole distance from Goiana to Natal is fifty-five leagues.

Natal, the capital,* sometimes called *Cidade dos Reys* (city of the kings), is situated on the right margin of the Potengi, nearly two miles above its mouth. "A foreigner," says Mr. Koster, "who might chance to land first at this place, on his arrival upon the coast of Brazil, would form but a very poor opinion of the state of the population of the country; for, if places like this are called cities, what must the towns and villages be? But such a judgement would not prove correct, for many villages, even of Brazil, surpass this city. The rank must have been given to it, not from what it was, or is, but from the expectation of what it might be at some future period.† The settlement upon rising ground, rather removed from the river, is properly the city, as the parish-church is there: it consists of a square, with houses on each side, having only a ground-floor, three churches, the governor's palace, a town-hall, and a prison. Three streets lead from it, which have also a few houses on each side. No part of the city is paved, although the sand is deep: on this account, indeed, a few of the inhabitants have raised a footpath of bricks before their own houses. The place may contain from six to seven hundred persons." The lower town is situated immediately along the southern bank of the river, there being only the usual width of a street between the houses and the water. This place may contain from two to three hundred inhabitants; and here live the men of trade of Rio Grande.

* So named because the church was consecrated on Christmas day.

† Natal was a position so highly valued, however, during the Dutch war, that its fortress was deemed the strongest place in Brazil.

"The bar of the Potengi is very narrow, but is sufficiently deep to admit vessels of 150 tons. The northern bank projects considerably, and for this reason, it is necessary that a ship should make for it from the southward. The entrance to the reef of rocks, which lies at some distance from the shore, also requires to be known, so that altogether the port is a difficult one. The river is very safe, when once within the bar; the water is deep and quite still, and two vessels might swing in its breadth; but it soon becomes shallow, and in the course of a few miles is greatly diminished. I should imagine that six or seven vessels might swing altogether in the harbour. The bars of rivers that are formed, as in this case, of sand, are, however, not to be trusted to without good pilots, as they soon change their depth, and even their situation. When the tide enters, the northern bank is overflowed about one mile from the mouth of the harbour, and spreads over a considerable extent of ground, which, even during the ebb, is always wet and muddy, but never becomes sufficiently deep to prevent passing."

A short time previously to Mr. Koster's journey to these parts, there was scarcely a well-dressed person in Rio Grande. The governor at length succeeded in persuading one family to send to Recife for English manufactured goods; these being once introduced, one would not be outdone by another, and in the course of two years, the fashion of wearing them became general. All the ladies at church appeared handsomely dressed in silks of various colours and black veils. A twelvemonth before, these same individuals, says Mr. Koster, would have gone to church in petticoats of printed Lisbon cottons, with square pieces of thick cloth over their heads, without stockings, and shoes down at heel.

The only town north of Natal is Estremoz, about ten miles further to the north-west, and at the same distance

from the sea. At Cape St. Roque, which forms the angle of this province, in lat. 5° 7′ south, long. 36° 15′ west, the coast of Brazil terminates towards the north-east, and the Atlantic, which has so long been its boundary on the east, begins to wash its northern shores. The province of Rio Grande lies between lat. 4° 10′ and 5° 45′ south, comprising about a hundred miles of coast. "The general features of the province," Mr. Koster says, "may be laid down as displaying a tolerable fertility to the southward of Natal, and as having a barren aspect to the northward of it, except on the banks and in the immediate neighbourhood of the Potengi." Its population, in 1775, amounted to 23,000, since which period, Mr. Southey supposes that it has more than doubled. Parts of the province are better peopled than might be expected from the insignificance of the towns. In the western part, there are three towns. The most considerable is a town formerly called Assu, but now dignified with the name of Villa Nova da Princesa, situated on the left bank of the river of the same name, *alias* the Parinhas, twenty-five miles above its mouth.* It lies in the route, taken by Mr. Koster, from Natal to Seara, of which we must give a brief outline.

The tract of country through which the road lies, is a plain traversed by the Seara-mirim,† a river remarkable for its serpentine evolutions. The first day's stage is *Lagoa Seca* (dry lake), a place which is laid under water by the rains, but which supplies the capital with farinha during the drought. Between eight and ten leagues from Natal is the hamlet of Pai Paulo, at the extremity of a

* Mr. Koster writes it *Acu*.

† Mr. Henderson states, that this is the same river as the Gunepabu, which discharges itself into the ocean three miles to the north of the Potengi. Mr. Koster lays down the *Genepapo* in his map, as a distinct river, with a considerable bay or estuary, and makes the Seara-mirim join the Potengi.

long, narrow, barren plain, where the traveller first approaches the river. The channel, when Mr. Koster travelled, was quite dry, except that here and there a well of brackish water had been dug in it, and its course was marked only by the depth of its bed, which, as well as the soil all around, is a loose sand. In one place, a miserable cow had found its way to a pool, which, from its owner's mark, was ascertained to have strayed at least a hundred leagues in search of water. The traveller has now entered on the *sertam*. For five days, the road lay across this sandy desert, the face of the country presenting one continued flat, during which the Seara-mirim was crossed two and forty times, winding "like the coils of a serpent." After a heavy rain, it presently fills, and the waters acquire the force of a torrent. Mr. Koster calculated the distance he had travelled from Pai Paulo at rather more than a hundred and twenty miles. He had advanced at the rate of about three miles an hour, travelling from half-past five to ten A. M., and from two, or half-past two, to six. He had now again reached the habitations of man; fazendas were occasionally met with, though the country was not much improved in its appearance, except that the sandy soil had given place to a more strong and undulating country, and every thing was parched and withered with drought. On approaching Assu, however, he came to lands covered with wood, and at length, had the joy of again seeing a church and a regular village, having travelled about 340 miles (from Goiana) in nineteen days.

The town of Assu, built in a square, contains two churches, a town-hall and prison, (at that time building,) and about 300 inhabitants. The river Assu here runs for a short distance in two channels, between which is an island of sand. The town is situated upon the northern bank of the smaller branch. The beds of both channels were now dry, but, when Mr. Koster returned from Seara,

it was a deep and dangerous river from two to three hundred yards in breadth; and the raft on which he crossed it, was carried down about fifty yards by the violence of the current, before he gained the other side. The houses have only a ground-floor; they are, in fact, mud-huts, some only of which are plastered and white-washed, and the floors are of earth, "so that, in spite of the greatest care, when water is scarce, the inhabitants cannot keep themselves clean." Though the lower classes of Brazilians of all castes, have many dirty customs allied to those of savage life, yet, Mr. Koster says, they are remarkably clean in their persons;—that is to say, they are fond of bathing. There are numerous salt-works near the town, which bring some trade to the place; and large barks, in the proper season, ascend the river to the town, distant seven leagues from its mouth. At the distance of about a league from Assu, is the lake of Piatô, three leagues in length by one in breadth, which is filled by the river in the rainy season, and is never quite dry. In summer, its sides afford a fine, rich soil for the cultivation of rice, maize, the cane, melons, and cotton. But for this lake, the people of this district would be famished in years of severe drought. The parched hills which surround the lake, its beautifully cultivated borders, and the dark and dangerous bogs which composed its centre at this time, formed altogether a very extraordinary scene. Between this place and the frontier of Seara, a distance of four days' journey, Mr. Koster passed over several salt-marshes, which are lakes in the rainy season.* The country consists, for the most part, of plains with trees thinly scattered and patches of wood. He crossed also,

* Cazal enumerates three of these lakes; the Apanhapeixe (catch-fish,) about four miles in circuit; the Pacco, a little smaller; and the Varges, six miles in length, but narrow. All these lakes, he says, totally disappear in years of drought.

between Assu and St. Luzia, the dry beds of three rivers. The last of these is the Upanema, which falls into the Appody, ten miles above its mouth.* The arraial of St. Luzia, which Mr. Koster entered on the fifth day after leaving Assu, stands on the left bank of the latter river, about twenty miles from the sea. Large canoes advance up the river, when full, as far as this place, which carries on some trade in salt. "From this situation downwards, the famous salterns of Mossoro are met with, the salt of which is as white as snow." The Appody has 130 miles of course, running almost the whole way through a flat country, interspersed with lakes, which it fills by its floods. This river divides Rio Grande do Norte from

THE PROVINCE OF SEARA.

From Assu, Mr. Koster had travelled in a north-westerly direction, approaching the coast; and on the second day after leaving St. Luzia, he descried from a hill of heavy sand called Tibou, the Englishman's home,—the sea. He reached, that night, a miserable hamlet called Areias, on the coast; and the next day, after travelling seven leagues, chiefly though salt-marshes, covered with the carnahuba palm, arrived at Aracati, the largest and most flourishing town in the province, situated on the eastern margin of the Jaguaribe (river of ounces), eight miles above its mouth. The computed distance from Assu is forty-five leagues.

"The town of Aracati," says Mr. Koster, "consists of one long street, with several minor ones branching from it. The houses, unlike those of any of the other small

* Mr. Koster, however, lays down three other rivers in his map, as falling into the sea between Assu and St. Luzia; the Cavallos, the Conchas, and the Urim.

places which I visited, have one story above the ground-floor. I inquired the reason, and was told, that the floods of the river were sometimes so great as to render necessary a retreat to the upper part of the houses. The town contains three churches, and a town-hall and prison, but no monasteries. This province does not contain any such pest. The inhabitants are in number about 600."* Mr. Koster descended the river to its mouth. It is, he says, in parts, about half a mile in breadth; in some places, where there are islands, broader. The bar is narrow and dangerous, owing to the sand-banks on each side: upon these the surf is very violent. "The sand is so loose at the mouth of the river, that the masters of the coasting vessels are obliged to use every precaution possible each voyage, as if they were entering a harbour with which they were unacquainted. The river widens immediately within the bar, and forms a spacious bay. Even if no other obstacle presented itself, the port cannot, from the uncertainty of the depth of its entrance, ever become of any importance. Coasters alone can enter, and the sand in the river also accumulates. The sand-banks project from each side in some places, so much as to render the navigation, even for a boat, somewhat difficult for a short distance above the bay." In the early part of 1815, Mr. Koster was informed, that the bar had been completely choked up during a violent gale, so that two coasters, then in the river, could not pass out.

From Aracati, it is a distance of thirty leagues, over a flat, sandy country covered with brushwood, to the *Villa da Fortcleza do Scara Grande*, the capital of the province. Mr. Koster performed the journey in four days,

* Cazal enumerates, besides the church, four hermitages: one may have been recently built. The town was created by John V. in 1723. Cotton and hides are the exports.

making the whole distance he had travelled from Natal in thirty-four days, a hundred and sixty leagues, "according to the vague computation of the country." He passed through an Indian village and the town of St. Joze, each containing about 300 inhabitants.

The town whose name we have given above at full length,—the town of the fortress of Seara, otherwise Villa do Forte, otherwise Assumption (from its chapel of *Nossa Senhora d'Assumpçao*), but more commonly called Seara, is described by Cazal as a "very middling town;" it is indebted for its pre-eminence chiefly to its superior antiquity. "The town is built," Mr. Koster says, "upon heavy sand, in the form of a square, with four streets leading from it; and it has an additional long street on the north side of the square, which runs in a parallel direction, but is unconnected with it. The dwellings have only a ground-floor, and the streets are not paved; but some of the houses have foot-paths of brick in front. It contains three churches, the governor's palace, the town-hall and prison, a custom-house, and the treasury. The number of inhabitants, I judge to be from 1,000 to 1,200. The fort, from which the place derives its name, stands upon a sand-hill close to the town, and consists of a sand or earth rampart towards the sea, and of stakes driven into the ground on the land side: it contained four or five pieces of cannon of several sizes, which were pointed various ways; and I observed that the gun of heaviest metal was mounted on the landside. Those which pointed to the sea, were not of sufficient calibre to reach a vessel in the usual anchorage-ground. The powder-magazine is situated upon another part of the sand-hill, in full view of the harbour. There is not much to invite the preference given to this spot: it has no river, nor any harbour, and the beach is bad to land upon; the breakers are violent, and the *recife*, or reef of rocks, affords very little protection to

vessels riding at anchor upon the coast. The settlement was formerly situated three leagues to the northward, upon a narrow creek, where there exists now only the remains of an old fort.* The public buildings are small and low, but are neat and white-washed, and adapted to the purposes for which they are intended. Notwithstanding the disadvantage to the general appearance, imparted by the wretched soil upon which the town has been erected, I could not avoid thinking that its look was that of a thriving place; but I believe that this can scarcely be said to be the real state of the town. The difficulty of land-carriage, particularly in such a country, the want of a good harbour, and the dreadful droughts, prevent any sanguine hope of its rise to opulence. The commerce of Seara is very limited, and is not likely to increase. The long credits which it is necessary for the trader to give, preclude the hope of quick returns, to which British merchants are accustomed."

The province of Seara is supposed to extend about ninety leagues from east to west, between Rio Grande and Piauhy, and ninety from north to south in its widest part, between the Atlantic and Pernambuco. Notwithstanding that it has so considerable a length of coast, it has no foreign commerce. The principal part of its produce is sent by coasting vessels to Maranham. The province produces no sugar, but the lands are adapted for the growth of cotton. Formerly, considerable quantities of beef were salted and dried for exportation; but the mortality among the cattle, caused by the frequent severe droughts, has occasioned this trade to be given up entirely, and the whole country is now supplied from Rio Grande

* This place is now called Villa Velha; it is near the mouth of the small river Seara, which has given its name both to the capital and the province,—about seven miles, Mr. Henderson says, to the *south-east*.

do Sul. At Pernambuco, the charqued meat still preserves the name of *carne do Scara.* In consequence of a dreadful drought which continued from the year 1792 to 1796, all the domestic animals are said to have perished, and many thousands of the population emigrated or died. The people subsisted for a long time wholly on wild honey; but this food contributed to produce diseases which swept them off by hundreds. The inhabitants of seven whole parishes forsook their dwellings at one time, one and all. Yet, in the course of ten years, the province appears to have recovered from this terrible visitation, and in 1813, the population amounted to 150,000 souls. From June to December, no rain falls, but the nights are cool, and bring a copious dew, and a sea-breeze regularly sets in from nine o'clock at night to five in the morning. It is when the other half year passes without rain, that the consequences become so dreadful; and this is said to occur nearly every tenth year. The province affords some good timber and cabinet wood; but the most common and most useful tree, is the *carnauba* or *carnahuba*, to which repeated reference has been made,—a species of palm producing a vegetable wax. "The inhabitants build houses with the wood, and cover them with the leaves;* they eat the fruit; the cattle eat the leaves, and even the trunk of the tree in extreme drought; and the people prepare from the wood, at such times, a flour for themselves, of which they form a paste, bitter indeed, and nauseous to a stranger's palate, but capable of supporting life." All the esculent plants of Portugal are cultivated here with success. "English potatoes" thrive,† but the onion

* The leaves are also used for mats, hats, hand-baskets, and panniers.

† "It is curious," remarks Mr. Southey, "that the Tupinamban root, as it was called when first introduced into Europe, should thus have obtained the name of English in its own country."

degenerates. The vine bears twice or thrice a year, but the grape never comes to perfection. Every breeder of cattle in the interior has his flock of sheep and goats: the goats are milked; the wool of the sheep is said to be of excellent quality, and promises to become an article of importance. The horses are good and hardy. What cattle are now reared above the home demand, are driven to Pernambuco; but the vampire-bats, the pest of this province, especially in seasons of drought, destroy thousands of the cattle, and have been known to reduce opulent graziers to poverty. These hideous creatures are more destructive than all the wild beasts. In all the rivers of the province, there is said to be "a species of fish resembling a skate, with a spur on its tail, the painful sting of which, when it does not produce death, leaves a terrible wound, for which the only remedy known is burning with a hot iron or with caustic." These formidable assailants confine themselves, however, to the bottom of dead water, and do no harm to those who bathe in running streams.

On the coast of this province, Cazal says, there are no promontories, no ports, no islands. He enumerates, in the eastern part, twelve towns besides the capital, and three in the western division. The most fertile district is that of the town of Crato, situated in a plain near a stream of that name, one of the heads of the Rio Salgado, which is itself the largest confluent of the Jaguaribe. This place is remarkable, because the inhabitants practise irrigation, by which means they are enabled to supply other parts with provisions in seasons of drought. Every fruit-tree of South America prospers here, especially limes, citrons, and bananas; but this favoured region has a serious drawback on its advantages, in the endemic affections of the eyes and the legs, to which its inhabitants are subject. The district is a portion of the Cayriris Novas.

Villa Viçosa, a large town on the serra of Hibiatapa, is distinguished as the birth-place of the celebrated Indian chieftain Camaram. It stands on land selected by the Jesuits for the establishment of a colony of Indians, whose descendants constitute the larger portion of its numerous population; and is in the most fertile and salubrious part of the province. Copper is found in the serra. Several of the other towns originated in *aldeias* established by the Jesuits. Throughout Seara, the number of pure Indians has diminished, and the population consists for the most part of a mixed race. The serra of Hibiatapa divides the province, on the west, from

THE PROVINCE OF PIAUHY.

Into this province Mr. Koster did not penetrate, and he was the first Englishman and heretic that had been seen in Rio Grande and Seara. Although ranked among the inland provinces, it has about eighteen leagues of coast, its form being almost triangular, while, on the southern side, where it is confined by Pernambuco and Goyaz, it extends in width upwards of a hundred. It reaches inland from north to south about 120 leagues, with an average breadth of fifty, its area being equal to that of England and Wales. It was originally a comarca of Maranham, from which it is separated, on the north-west, by the river Parnahiba; it was made a separate province in 1718, but did not receive resident governors till 1758. The province was first explored and conquered, not for the sake of mines or slaves, but for its pastures; and the conqueror, Domingos Affonso, was the greatest grazier in Pernambuco. At his death, he bequeathed thirty of his numerous large fazendas to the Jesuits, in trust, for endowing maidens in marriage, clothing widows, and other works of charity. On the

expulsion of the order, the Crown assumed this trust; and the thirty estates, with three others added by the Jesuits, continue to be administered for the same purpose, by three directors, with a salary each of 300 milreis. In 1724, the number of fazendas in the province was about 400. Maranham, Pernambuco, Bahia, and Minas Geraes look chiefly, Mr. Southey says, to Piauhy for their cattle.* "The communication with Maranham is easy; that with Pernambuco lies through a country where want of rain not unfrequently occasions extreme suffering; but, between Piauhy and the river St. Francisco, a *sertam* intervenes, varying in breadth from twelve and fifteen to forty or fifty leagues, which may be termed almost a desert. This must be traversed to reach either Bahia or Minas; and during the last five months of the year, if the season be dry, the journey becomes dangerous. Five roads, or rather tracks across the wilderness, are used; and upon each, some individuals have formed tanks, by draining the river Pontal, or some other stream which, like that river, is dry in summer. By thus husbanding the water, they were enabled to establish a few *fazendas*; and extensive tracts of country will, in time, be rendered habitable by such means. Travellers upon this journey have perished for thirst, and sometimes owed their lives to the *imbuzeiro*,—a remarkable tree with which bounti-

* "A flourishing fazenda produces annually from eight hundred to a thousand calves; but, after deducting the tithe, which, in Brazil, is paid to the Crown, and the fourth for the *vaqueiro* (herdsman), it can only export from two hundred and fifty to three hundred oxen. The cows are always reserved for breeding and home consumption; the rest are accounted for by the plague of flies, vampire-bats, (from which the folds afford no security,) jaguars, snakes, poisonous herbs (of which there are many kinds), and above all by drought, which frequently converts all the grass in the country into standing hay; and when that is consumed, the cattle perish by thousands."—*Southey*, vol. iii. p. 756.

ful Providence has blessed the most arid regions of Brazil. Bulbs, about a palm in diameter, and full of water, are attached to its shallow roots. Arruda names this tree *spondia tuberosa*. Its fruit is smaller than a hen's egg, and, under a tough skin, contains a succulent pulp of a grateful flavour, at once acid and sweet. The Brazilians make a dainty of its juice with curds and sugar. The people of Piauhy make a beverage from the *buriti*, one of the loftiest and most beautiful of the palm tribe, but which grows only in moist or swampy places. Its fruit is about the size and shape of a hen's egg, covered with red scales arranged spirally: under these is an oily pulp of the same vermilion colour. The liquor which they prepare from it is said to be nutritious and palatable; but, if drunk to excess, it has the singular property of tinging the skin and the whites of the eyes, without appearing to affect the general health. The *piqui* (the *acantacaryx pinguis* of Arruda) is of more importance to a country like Piauhy, where drought is the great evil, for it prospers in a dry and sandy soil, and produces in profusion a wholesome oily fruit, the size of an orange, of which the inhabitants are very fond. It grows to the height of fifty feet, with a proportionate girth, and the timber is good for ship-building. This tree is also a native of Seara."*

The capital of the province, which, up to 1762, bore the name of the town of Mocha, received from King Joze, with the title of city, the appellation of Oeyras, in honour of the great minister, the first count of that name. It is, in fact, a small town, containing only a church and two chapels; the houses, consisting merely of a ground-floor, are of wood and clay white-washed, but are said to be commodiously and even elegantly constructed. The

* Southey, vol. iii. pp. 758-9.

greater part of the inhabitants are Europeans. The town stands on a little stream which, three miles lower, falls into the Caninde, a confluent of the great Parnahiba, which it joins twenty leagues below. It is about seventy-five leagues south of Parnahiba, the sea-port of the province, 100 leagues south-west of St. Luiz in Maranham, forty leagues from Cachias in the same province, and about 200 leagues west of Recife. About the end of the eighteenth century, the population of Oeyras and its district was estimated at 14,000; but the city does not contain, probably, a fourth of that number.

St. Joam da Barra da Parnahiba is larger and more important than the capital. It stands on sandy ground five leagues from the sea, on the right bank of the eastern and largest branch of the river from which it takes its name. It contains some houses of one story above the ground-floor, which are not seen in any other town in the province. The place is ill supplied with water, and fevers are prevalent; but its advantageous position secures it a considerable trade, and it is a great *depôt* for cotton and hides. The country about the Parnahiba produces also excellent melons, and the tobacco grown in the south-western part of the province is preferred even to that of Bahia. The river is navigable for barks of considerable burthen more than a hundred leagues up, to its confluence with the Rio das Balsas, which joins it on the left margin: canoes ascend an eight days' voyage almost to its source in the south-western limits of the province. The depth of the river has diminished so much near its embouchure, that vessels which used to ascend to the town, now anchor two leagues below it, and the entrance is rendered dangerous by shoals and a heavy surf.—There are six other towns, all inconsiderable. The river Piauhy, which gives its name to the province, originating in the southern frontier, runs northward, through pasture-lands, and after a course of

140 miles, enters the Caninde, fifty miles below the capital. There are no *serras* of any consequence, nor any large forests in this province.

Pursuing the line of coast westward, we now arrive at the important

PROVINCE OF MARANHAM.

THIS name, which is common to the province, the capital, the island on which it stands, the river Meary, and the mighty Amazons, is derived from *Mara-non*, "not sea,"—the appellation which the navigator Pinzon first bestowed on the estuary of the Amazons, on finding that its waters were not salt. Hence followed the Portuguese denomination of this territory, originating in the mistaken notion that the Meary was that river. The province of Maranham now gives the title of marquis to our distinguished countryman Lord Cochrane, conferred upon him by the Emperor for his brilliant services. Although but ill peopled in the interior, a considerable portion of territory being still in the possession of various savage tribes, its capital ranks, in commercial importance, the fourth city in Brazil. Its bending line of coast extends 120 leagues. It lies between 1° and 7° 30′ south latitude, being nearly 400 miles in length from north to south, having Piauhy on the east, Goyaz on the south, and Para on the west.

Mr. Koster proceeded to Maranham from Pernambuco by sea, and arrived at the capital after a voyage of seven days. The coast is very dangerous,* and, especially after

* "The navigation of the coast is so difficult from north to south, both wind and current setting in from the south, that it is easier for Para and Maranham to communicate with Lisbon, than with Rio or Bahia; and for that reason, the bishops of Para and St. Luiz were suffragans of the patriarch of Lisbon, and not of the primate of Brazil."—*Southey*, vol. iii. p. 751.

passing Rio Grande, has a dreary and dismal appearance. The harbour is formed by a narrow creek in the island on which the city stands. It is of sufficient depth at present for merchantmen to enter, but is so beset with shoals and islets as to require a pilot, and its depth is diminishing.* It is defended by several forts, not in very effective order. The island of Maranham forms the south-east side of the bay of Marcos, having to the eastward the bay of St. Joze. It lies in lat. 2° 32′ south; long. 43° 40′ west. The city of St. Luiz is thus described by Mr. Koster.

"It is built upon very unequal ground, commencing from the water's edge, and extending to the distance of about one mile and a half in a north-east direction. The space which it covers, ought to contain many more inhabitants than is actually the case; but the city is built in a straggling manner, and it comprises some broad streets and squares. This gives to it an airy appearance, which is particularly pleasant in so warm a climate. Its situation upon the western part of the island, and upon one side of a creek, almost excludes it from the sea breeze, by which means the place is rendered less healthy than if it was more exposed. The population may be computed at about 12,000 persons or more,† including negroes, of which the proportion is great, being much more considerable than at Pernambuco. The streets are mostly paved, but are out of repair. The houses are many of them neat and pretty, and of one story in height: the lower part of them is appropriated to the servants, to shops without windows, to

* Mr. Koster says, "it is worthy of remark, that the tide rises gradually more and more along the coast of Brazil from south to north. Thus, at Rio, the rise is said to be trifling; at Recife, it is from five to six feet; at Itamaraca, eight feet; and at Maranham, eighteen feet."

† Mr. Henderson says, about 30,000 inhabitants, and "the streets are disagreeably crowded with slaves."

warehouses, and other purposes, as at Pernambuco. The family live upon the upper story, the windows of which reach down to the floor, and are ornamented with iron balconies. The churches are numerous, and there are likewise Franciscan, Carmelite, and other convents. The places of worship are gaudily decorated in the inside, but no plan of architecture is aimed at in the formation of the buildings, with the exception of the convents, which preserve the regular features appertaining to such edifices. The governor's palace stands upon rising ground, not far from the water side, with the front towards the town. It is a long, uniform, stone building, of one story in height: the principal entrance is wide, but without a portico; the western end joins the town-hall and prison, which appear to be part of the same edifice. An oblong piece of ground in front, covered with grass, gives it on the whole a handsome and striking appearance. One end of this is open to the harbour and to a fort in the hollow, close to the water; the other extremity is nearly closed by the cathedral.* One side is almost taken up with the palace and other public buildings, and the opposite space is occupied by dwelling-houses and streets leading down into other parts of the city. The ground upon which the whole town stands, is composed of a soft red stone, so that the smaller streets leading from the town into the country, some of which are not paved, are full of gullies through which the water runs in rainy seasons. These streets are formed of houses consisting only of the ground-floor, and having thatched roofs; the windows are without glass, and the dwellings have a most mean and shabby appearance. The city contains a custom-house and treasury: the former

* This church, which formerly belonged to the Jesuits, is said to be the finest of any in the maritime cities, excepting that of Para. The Jesuits' college is now the episcopal palace.

is small, but was quite large enough for the business of the place, until lately."

The importance of this province has increased with extraordinary rapidity. Till about the middle of the last century, no cotton was exported; and it is said, that, when the first parcel was about to be shipped, a petition was presented to the *Camara* (municipality), by several of the inhabitants, that the exportation might not be permitted, lest there should be a deficiency for home consumption. The cultivation of rice, when first introduced, was regarded as a foolish and vexatious innovation. A person of the name of Belfort was the first who planted it in this province, some of whose descendants are now among the wealthiest inhabitants of St. Luiz.* These are now almost the only articles of exportation, for the soil is said not to be suited to the sugar-cane. Mr. Koster has given a statement of the exports of cotton for the seven years from 1809 to 1815 inclusive, which makes the average upwards of 54,000 bags. From other tables appended to Mrs. Graham's Journal, it appears that, from 1815 to 1820, the average was as high as 68,000. The exports of rice varied, during these years, from 56,000 to 82,000 bags. The other exports consisted of hides, tanned and untanned, skins, and gums. The total exports appear to have tripled since 1812.† The returns of 1821 are considerably lower,

* On the establishment of the imperial government in Maranham, after its surrender to Lord Cochrane, one of the members of the new council elected by the inhabitants, was Joze Joaquim Vieira Belford.

† In 1810, two English merchants only were established at St. Luiz, the commercial transactions of British houses being entrusted chiefly to Portuguese merchants of the place. English establishments have since considerably multiplied, a consul has recently been appointed, and there is now an English hospital, amply provided with means from a contribution fund. Two thirds of the cotton exported from Maranham, is sent, Mr. Henderson says, to

owing either to the interruption of trade by the political circumstances of the country, or to their not being brought down to the close of the year. Mrs. Graham adds one unhappy item in proof of the importance of the province: "The amount of the duties on the importation of slaves paid by Maranham to the treasury at Rio during the ten years ending with 1820, was 30,239 milrees"—about 7,800*l.** The number of farms is stated at 4,856; that of proprietors at 2,683. At present, the inequality of ranks in this place, is far greater than in the commercial cities to the south. Some of the opulent merchants possess no fewer than from 1,000 to 1,500 slaves. The fruits in this captaincy are excellent. Cattle, sheep, and goats are stated to be more prolific than in Europe, but they degenerate. "There is said to be a native silk-worm here, whose cone is thrice the size of the European one, the colour of the silk a deep yellow: it feeds upon the *pinheira*, or *atta*, an indigenous tree, and upon the leaves of the orange." Upon the whole, this province may be considered as possessing great capabilities, but it is at present quite in an infant or semi-barbarous state. It remains to be seen, what will be effected by the imperial government.

When Mr. Koster visited Maranham, the island itself was for the most part uncultivated: the roads were extremely bad, even in the immediate vicinity of St. Luiz, the country-houses being few, and no care being taken of the paths; the slaves at work in the streets were suffered to go entirely naked; and no means had been taken to

Liverpool, whence the larger portion of manufactured goods is shipped for Brazil, as the imports are paid for wholly in produce. Nearly the whole amount of the annual exports of cotton to England, is returned to Brazil in a manufactured state in the course of the following year.

* The number of slaves imported into Maranham in 1817, was upwards of 8000: the average is about 5000.

civilise or to conciliate the wild natives who infested the plantations. Of the ignorance which prevailed, Mr. Koster gives a curious instance. "An Englishman with whom I was acquainted, arrived at Maranham, a short time after the opening of the trade to British shipping; he was riding in the vicinity of the city one afternoon, when he was accosted by an old woman, who said that she had heard of the arrival of an Englishman, and wished to know if it was true, as she was going to St. Luiz, and much desired to see this *bicho*, or animal. After some further conversation upon the subject, he told her that the *bicho* she was speaking to, was the Englishman himself. Of the truth of this, some difficulty was found in persuading her; but when she was confident that it was so, she cried out, '*Ai tam bonito*'—O, how handsome! She expected to have been shewn some horridly ugly beast, which it was dangerous to approach, and was consequently agreeably surprised to find that she was mistaken, and to see flesh and blood in human form, handsomely put together."

The bay of St. Marcos is spotted with several beautiful islands, and is of sufficient extent to admit of considerable grandeur. The width from St. Luiz to the opposite shore, Mr. Koster says, is between four and five leagues; its length is much greater. "Towards the south end it receives the waters of the Meary, along the banks of which are several cattle-estates; but those of the river Itapicuru, which runs into the narrow channel between the main land and the island, are the most fertile and the best cultivated lands."* On the opposite side of the bay is the

* This statement appears to be incorrect, since, according to Cazal, the Itapicuru enters the bay of St. Joze. The strait which connects the two bays of St. Joze and St. Marcos, separating the island from the continent, he calls the river Mosquito, and says that it is fifteen miles long.

town of Alcantara, for some time the head town of the old capitania of Cuma. It contains four hermitages, two convents, a town-hall and prison; and a fort occupies the site of the Jesuits' *hospicio*. The town is built on a semicircular hill, and, at first sight, Mr. Koster says, has a pretty appearance, but falls short of its promise on a nearer examination. "The houses are many of them of one story in height, and are built of stone; but the major part have only the ground-floor. It extends back to some distance in a straggling manner, with gardens and large spaces between each house; and many of the habitations in that situation are thatched, and some of them are out of repair. As the hill which rises from the water-side is not high, and the land beyond rather declines in a contrary direction, the meaner part of the town is not seen at the first view. Alcantara is however a thriving place, and its importance increases rapidly, as the lands in the neighbourhood are in request for cotton-plantations. A handsome stone quay was building upon the inside of a neck of land, round which the harbour extends, for small craft.

"Not far from the mouth of the port of Alcantara, stands an island of three miles in length and about one in breadth, called the *Ilha do Livramento:* it is inhabited by one man and woman, who have under their care a chapel dedicated to our Lady of Deliverance, which is visited by the inhabitants of the neighbouring shores, once every year, for the purpose of celebrating by a festival this invocation of the Virgin. My departure from Maranham sooner than I had purposed at first, prevented the fulfilment of my intention of landing and spending a day upon this spot. I know not what idea I might have formed of the island, if I had more narrowly examined it, but the view I had of it at a distance was extremely beautiful. From what I heard of it, I think, that if any one was about to settle at Maranham, here it is that he should try to fix his residence."

The Itapicuru is the most considerable river in the province. It originates near its southern extremity, running in a north-easterly course to the town of Cachias, where it changes its direction to the north-west. Its current is rapid, and the course winding, generally through extensive woods. This river abounds with the electric eel described by Humboldt; a small species, but its powers are greater than those of the torpedo. The fishermen who use the line about the heads of this river, occasionally catch and are caught by them: the shock, conveyed up the line and rod, is said to benumb the arm, so as to deprive it of the power of motion. "This electrical effect is attributed (by the natives) to a stone the fish has in its head, to which the superstitious attach many virtues."* Cachias, originally called Aldeias Altas, is a populous place of some commercial importance. It is situated on the eastern margin of the Itapicuru, upwards of 200 miles south-east of St. Luiz, and nearly the same distance north-north-west of Oeyras. Great quantities of rice and cotton are raised here: but the inhabitants are noted for a destructive propensity to gambling, whereby they have ruined many of their creditors in St. Luiz. This is the central point of communication between St. Luiz, Piauhy, and Goyaz. Large flat-bottomed boats, fit for navigating in shoal-water, ascend the river thus far, and convey the produce down to Rozario or Itapicuru Grande, forty miles above St. Luiz, where the navigation by other vessels terminates. Opposite to Cachias is Trezedellas, inhabited by descendants of the aborigines, where the Jesuits formerly had a seminary, to which the people of Piauhy used to send their children for education. The river is navigable by canoes thirty leagues higher, to the small arraial of Principe Regente,

* Henderson, p. 438.

founded in 1807. "The Timbiras of the Wood attacked the settlers, and killed several; but active hostilities were carried on against them in return, and they were driven from a *tabar*, containing 500 houses, within two leagues of the arraial. Fazendas were then established under the protection of this settled camp, without fear or further molestation; and it was found that the navigation thus far was good. The rapids and shallows which, half a century before, had been thought to render it impracticable, proved to be of little importance when the river was understood."* Thirty miles south-south-west of this arraial, is St. Bento das Balsas, or the *freguezia de Pastos Bons*, situated among small hills adapted for pasture, ten miles from the Parnahiba, and twenty-eight from the Itapicuru. The whole of the territory lying between these rivers, has been evacuated by the Indians.

All the other towns are inconsiderable. The Meary, or Mearim, the next river in size, is navigable to the centre of the province, where the further progress of boats is impeded by a fall; but its course lies chiefly through the territories of barbarous tribes. This river is remarkable for its tremendous bore. "The extent of beach which has been left bare during nine hours' ebb, is covered in a quarter of an hour, and the tide flows up for three hours with the rapidity of a mill-stream. This is felt for five leagues. There are spots, called *esperas*, or resting-places, where boats take shelter at such times. It is only at high-water that they can enter; for the river, which has every where else a great depth, is dilated over a wide extent of shoals at its mouth."†

* Southey, vol. iii. p. 749.

† Southey, vol. iii. p. 750. Mr. Henderson thus explains the phenomenon. The current of the Meary is so rapid, that it suspends the progress of the tide for a considerable period, and produces by this opposition an extraordinary agitation of the waters,

There yet remains to be noticed that immense area lying to the westward of Maranham, between the great river Amazons, and its scarcely inferior confluent the Madera, and reaching southward to the confines of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, which forms

THE PROVINCE OF PARA.

THIS province, extending nearly 800 miles from east to west, and upwards of 400 from north to south, is still, to a great extent, a *terra incognita*. Cazal divides it into four large districts: *Para Proper*, a flat and wooded country, extending west of Maranham two hundred miles to the river Toccantins; *Xingutania*, lying between the Toccantins and the Xingu; *Tapajonia*, extending from the latter river to the Tapajos; and *Mundrucania*, so denominated from the Mundrucu Indians who inhabit it, extending from the Tapajos to the Madera. Of these districts, the last three are, with the exception of a few settlements on the margins of the rivers, almost wholly in the possession of the aboriginal tribes. The Xingu has never yet been navigated to its heads; no authentic account exists, therefore, of a considerable portion of the country which it waters. The southern part even of Para Proper is occupied by wild Indians. It is by courtesy only, therefore, that these unconquered and unappropriated regions are considered as forming integral parts of the empire of Brazil. But Para, the capital, is stated to have been the first town to adopt the new constitution of Portugal. Both in its commercial and its political relations, it is likely to follow the example of Maranham.

which is called *pororocas*. When the tide has vanquished its opponent, it flows up for three hours with extraordinary rapidity, occasioning a loud noise.

Para, now no longer known by its original name of Belem, is a populous and flourishing city. It stands on the eastern margin of the river Toccantins, in the bay of Guajara, at the northern angle of the embouchure of the Guama, opposite the great island dos Joanes, in latitude 1° 30′ south; longitude 48° 30′ west. It is an episcopal city, and contains many chapels, two convents, Carmelite and Capuchin, a misericordia, and a hospital. The convent of the Mercenarios, that order being extinct in the captaincy, has been converted into barracks; and the Jesuits' college is now the episcopal palace and seminary. The cathedral and the governor's palace are styled magnificent buildings. The streets are straight, the principal ones paved, and the houses are chiefly of stone. The city has a judicial tribunal, a splendid ecclesiastical establishment, an ouvidor, a juiz de fora, a port-admiral, royal professors, a botanical garden, a theatre, and an arsenal. The population is estimated at 20,000, including comparatively few negroes. The harbour is shallow, and it is said to be diminishing in depth; the approach is difficult on account of the various currents which set along the coast. The produce of these parts used to be sent to Maranham, the trade with this place being carried on with coasting-vessels; but, says Mr. Henderson, "the honourable ambition and activity of the English merchant, which lead him to every part of the globe for the purpose of commerce, did not long allow this place to escape his observation; and one or two establishments were formed here soon after the arrival of the royal family, which have increased to five or six. The Confiance, British sloop of war, first navigated up to the town, demonstrating that vessels not drawing more water might accomplish the same object; and a house at Glasgow subsequently employed two vessels of much larger burthen in the trade of this city. For its present commerce, however, vessels

of a smaller class are better adapted. The spontaneous productions, abundant fertility, and extent of the province, fully justify the expectation of its becoming a very considerable place; and more particularly so, from the probability of its being, at no distant period, the only mart for the increasing productions of Goyaz and Matto Grosso. Its cottons have for some time held a rank in the British market, and obtained a price, not far short of the Bahia cottons. The communication is principally with Liverpool, and from ten to fifteen small brigs proceed from thence to Para annually with English manufactures, and return with produce. One or two vessels also from London have recently maintained with it a regular intercourse." The other exports consist of rice, cocoa, coffee, sarsaparilla, copaiba, tapioca, gum, Indian rubber, Maranham chesnuts, hides raw and tanned, molasses, and timber. By means of the royal botanical garden, the bread-fruit tree has been introduced into this captaincy, and the oriental spices appear in the list of its exports. Ships for the navy are built here, and timber has been exported to Lisbon for the use of the arsenals, to a great amount. The sugar grown in the neighbourhood of the city, is bad, the soil, which is alluvial, on a bottom of white clay, not being favourable to the cane.

The climate of Para is invariably hot, even when it rains; and the place was formerly deemed very unhealthy; but a material improvement has taken place since the thinning of the woods and the introduction of cattle, and there is no plague of insects. The days and nights are nearly equal all the year.

The colony in Para was originally "an offset" of that of Maranham. In 1615, Francisco Caldeira sailed from St. Luiz with 200 men, in three caravels, intrusted with the project of selecting an eligible situation for a settlement more immediately within the vicinity of the Ama-

zons, with a view to promote the navigation of that river, and to frustrate the attempts of any other nation to form settlements in this direction. The Dutch at one time had establishments on both margins of the great river, but were expelled about the year 1622. The early history of the province exhibits the same nefarious system of slave-hunting, that was practised in almost all the captaincies; but it was carried on in Para with peculiar cruelty. An end was at length put to the captivity of the Indians, none but negroes being allowed to be sold as slaves; and under the Jesuits, the population became more numerous than that of the eastern provinces. In no other part of Brazil, says Mr. Southey, have the evil consequences of their expulsion been more perceptible; "because no where had so many *aldeias* been established, nor had they any where else been in so flourishing a state. The Bishop of Para, Dr. Fr. Caetano Brandram, a most exemplary prelate, who, between the years 1784 and 1788, performed the arduous duty of visiting almost the whole of his extensive diocese, every where in his journal laments over the decay of the *aldeias* and the degraded state of the Indians. The bishop describes Para as a country which only wanted population to be made the loveliest garden in the world. But the Portuguese who went thither from Europe at that time, were of the very lowest order; and as soon as they arrived, they were infected, he says, with the disease of the land, a kind of dissolute laziness, as injurious to worldly concerns as to manners and morals. Their common course was to open a *taverna*, or a haberdasher's shop, or to stroll about with a miserable assortment of paltry goods. Yet, these persons, the outcasts and refuse of their own country, were not so bad as many of the settled colonists. The huckster and the pedlar, however low in their respective callings, are agents of civilization. The vilest people in Para were those numerous planters

who, living at a distance from the priest and the magistrate, abandoned themselves to their own will, and gave full scope to the worst propensities of their corrupted nature. They dwelt upon their estates, frequently two or three days' voyage from a church, or even further, in a country where there were no roads; and many of them lived and died without the slightest observance of the forms of religion, in the worst state of moral, intellectual, and spiritual darkness. The bishop draws a frightful picture of their profligate way of life. 'And for their miserable slaves,' he exclaims, 'many masters treat them as if they were dogs, caring for nothing but that they should do their work. Either they are never baptised, or, if baptised, they pass their lives without confession, because they are left entirely without instruction, and they are suffered to die with the utmost inhumanity; nor does the owner order a single mass for the soul of the poor creature, who has been worn to death in enriching him. I have seen some who were maimed in their hands and feet; others whose sides and lower parts had been cut to pieces,—the effect of such punishments, that it is difficult to conceive how any human beings could be so monstrous in wickedness as to have inflicted them. But what can be expected? The fear of God is wanting, and if that be taken away, there is nothing too bad for the heart of man to conceive and perpetrate.'"*

The only other town of any consideration in Para proper, is Bragança, formerly Cayte (or Cahete), and the capital of a short-lived captaincy, which name it derived from the river on which it stands; it is about twenty miles from the ocean, nearly 100 east-north-east of Para,

* Southey's *History of Brazil*, vol. iii. pp. 697, 9, 742. "To this day," Mr. Southey says, "the threat which is held out to a vicious or refractory negro in Pernambuco, is, that he shall be sent to Para for sale."

and 70 east-south-east of Point Tegioca.* It is a port at which coasters touch in their way from Maranham to Para. Its population, in 1787, amounted to 1600, principally whites; and it has continued to prosper, being one of the best as well as oldest towns in the state. Villa Vicoça, or Cameta, once the capital of another small subordinate captaincy, is the largest town in the whole province, next to Para. It is situated on the left bank of the Toccantins, (consequently in the district denominated by Cazal Xingutania,) about forty miles from its mouth, and ninety miles south-west of the capital, with which it has a distinct water communication by means of a natural canal, navigable with the tide. Villa Viçosa contained, in 1784, 6,000 inhabitants, all whites, except a few negro and mulatto slaves. The population belonged to the parish, however, rather than the town, which presented a miserable appearance, the houses being mere hovels. This place is a mart between Para and Goyaz. The huge river Toccantins here expands to the breadth of ten miles, and is beautified with numerous islands. The tide extends twenty-six leagues higher up, to the registry of Fort Alcobaça, and the navigation so far is uninterrupted by either rocks or rapids. The great *Ilha dos Joanes*, which is separated from the main land west of the river Toccantins, by the strait of Tagypuru on the south, extending ninety miles from north to south, and 120 from east to west, is one of the best peopled districts in the province. It contains many small towns and villages, and, from its extensive grazing farms, the capital draws its chief supply of meat. The population is of all castes and shades, but the Indians are the most numerous; they are very imperfectly civilised. Santarem, in the district

* Point Tegioca is in latitude 0° 27′ south; longitude 48° 8′ west. Villa Cahete is in latitude 0° 36′ south; longitude 46° 50′ west.

of Tapajonia, is an important town on account of its situation within the embouchure of the river Tapajos, and it is said to be flourishing. It is a port and register for canoes navigating towards Matto Grosso and the upper Amazons. It was originally an Indian *aldeia*, founded by the Jesuits, and there are still some Indians here, whose houses exhibit a neat and regular appearance, while those of the whites, who reside chiefly on their plantations, are neglected. It contained, in 1788, above 1,300 inhabitants, a large proportion of whom were whites.

The governor or captain-general of the province of Para, who is generally an individual of noble birth, has also nominally within his jurisdiction the two subordinate

PROVINCES OF SOLIMOENS AND GUIANA.

THE former of these comprises the territory south of the river Amazons and west of the Madera, extending southward and westward to the Spanish territories. It is computed to be about 250 miles in length from north to south, between 3° 23′ and 7° 30′ south latitude, and nearly 600 miles in breadth from the Madera to the river Javari. Little of it is known, except along the Madera and the northern coast bordering on the Amazons. Five large rivers,* tributary to that vast reservoir of waters, traverse the province from north to south, and communicate with numerous confluents, or spread into extensive lakes. The country is inhabited by numerous Indian nations, speaking different idioms. The province contains nine povoaçoes or towns, all founded by the Carmelites. They lie chiefly along the banks of the great

* Their names are, the Puru, the Coary, the Teffe, the Hyurba, and the Hyutahy. Mr. Henderson calls the Javari, the Hyabary: we have followed Mr. Southey's orthography. The smallest of these rivers is said to measure more than 600 yards at its mouth.

river. The most remote of the Portuguese establishments up the Amazons river, (which Mr. Southey proposes to call the Orellana,) is the *prezidio* de S. Francisco Xavier de Tabatinga,* situated at the mouth of the Javari; the distance from the city of Para is estimated by the boatmen at 484 leagues,—a voyage of eighty-seven days. This province derives its name from a nation of the aborigines, denominated *Soriman*, corrupted into *Solimáõ* and *Solimoens*. It is less peopled and less improved than any part of Brazil. Equal in extent to the whole island of Great Britain, it possesses unequalled facilities for inland navigation, which may hereafter render it a state of considerable importance.

The province of Guiana is the name at present given to the whole of the Portuguese possessions north of the river Orellana or Amazons. It is obvious, however, that this can be but a temporary designation of a territory extending 900 miles from east to west, and from 4° north to 4° south latitude. The western part, forming the ouvidoria of the Rio Negro, might with propriety be considered as already a distinct province. This great river, which has its source in the Andes, communicates by one of its branches, the Cassiquiari, with the mighty Oronoco, and after a course of upwards of 1100 miles, enters the Amazons in latitude 3° 16′ south. Nine leagues below the mouth of the Cassiquiari, and 485 leagues from the city of Para, (a voyage of eighty-six days' going up,) is the fort of St. Joze dos Marabytaunas, the remotest station in this captaincy, situated on the left bank of the Rio Negro. Here is stationed a garrison. Between this fort and the *povoaçao* of Lamalonga, about 120 leagues below, there are about seventeen settlements, chiefly or

* Tabatinga is a fine white clay, much used in many parts of Brazil for buildings.

wholly composed of civilised Indians, some on one side of the river, some on the other. Three leagues below is the *aldeia* of Thomar, or Bararua, which is said to have contained at one time 1000 male adults, but, in 1788, the whole population was only 500. Seventeen leagues below is the town of Moreira, finely situated, and containing in 1783 about 300 inhabitants, chiefly Portuguese emigrants: the present population is a mixed race. Barcellos, formerly the capital of the captaincy, and still the largest of its towns, is sixteen leagues below Moreira. Between the hamlets of Poyares (seven leagues below Barcellos) and Carvoeiro (seventeen leagues lower down,) the Rio Branco, the largest confluent, enters the Rio Negro.* The Portuguese have seven parishes on this river, inhabited by Indians, all formed since 1775; since which time cattle have been introduced, which have multiplied exceedingly in the fine pastures with which the country abounds. They have also a fort there, distant, by the rivers, 359 leagues from Para,—a voyage of nine weeks. Nine leagues below Carvoeiro, is the flourishing town of Moura; and three leagues above the mouth of the river, on its left bank, is the town of Rio Negro, (formerly the *fortaleza da Barra*,) the deposite for all the exports of the river, and the seat of government; it contains a handsome church, a pottery, a cotton-manufactory, and a manufactory of cordage from the piassaba palm; all royal establishments. At its mouth, the Rio Negro is only a mile wide, though, higher up, it expands in some places to the prodigious width of seven and eight leagues. "Near the shore, the water appears the colour of amber;

* It rises in the Serra Baracayna, the northern waters of which range form the Paragua, one of the great confluents of the Oronoco. The Mahu, which joins the Rio Branco from the south, originates in a ridge whence the counter-streams form the Essequebo.

every where else, it is described as literally seeming black as ink: it is, however, perfectly clear, pure, and wholesome. The confluence is said to be a most impressive spectacle; but the turbid stream of the Orellana predominates, and the Black River loses its purity as well as its name. It is with the greatest delight that boatmen ascending from Para, or descending from the province of the Solimoens, come in sight of the high lands at the bar; for this river is free from all the physical plagues with which the Orellana is afflicted: no torment of insects is felt there, no evils of local and endemic disease. When the Indians, therefore, escaping from both, first dip their oars into the clear dark waters, they set up a shout of joy, and enter with the sound of their rude music upon its happier navigation."

The Yapura (called by the Spaniards the Grande Caqueta) divides the captaincy of Rio Negro from the viceroyalty of the Nuevo Reyno de Granada: it is the second in magnitude of the great rivers that flow into the Orellana. Such is the weight and force of its current, that no boat could make way against it, were it not broken by innumerable islands. The scenery on its banks is beautiful, but the country is unhealthy. There is a communication by lakes and cross streams with the Rio Negro. The most eastern settlement in this captaincy, is Sylves, situated on an island in Lake Saraca, which communicates by six channels with the Orellana, from which it is distant about thirty miles. "That part of the captaincy of the Rio Negro which is on the north of the Orellana, lies between lat. 4° south and 3° 30′ north, and extends through thirteen degrees of longitude, from 58° to 71° west. It is free from the plague of insects, which, upon many parts of the Orellana, is almost intolerable. The climate also is favourable to Europeans, except along the Yapura. Even there, the natives appear to feel no ill effects from its pre-

sent state. The causes of its insalubrity will be lessened in proportion as woods are cleared, and channels opened for the stagnant waters; and while civilisation advances, a mixed population is rising, in whom the European mind and the Indian constitution are likely to be united."*

The river Jamunda (properly Nhamunda) divides this ouvidoria, on the east, from the government of Para, which includes twelve towns on the left bank of the Orellana. The most considerable town in the western part of this immense province, is Macapa, situated on the margin of the Amazons, one league north of the equator. It was a forced colony, established by the government, consisting chiefly of islanders from the Azores, and contained in 1784, 1,800 inhabitants, all whites except the slaves. It has a good fort, a church, a hospital, and some tolerable streets of tiled houses; but, though well placed in some respects, is dreadfully afflicted with fevers, attributed to the slimy deposit of the Orellana. It is the most easterly settlement in the southern part of the province. Montalegre, one of the principal missions of the Jesuits, situated on an island formed by the Gurupatuba, about seven miles from the Orellana, contained, in 1784, above 1000 inhabitants, chiefly Christianised Indians, who are said to have borne an excellent character for industry: it is still a place of some consideration. The clove-tree prospers in its district, and there is a government establishment for sawing the trunks of the cedars deposited by the floods.

The northern limits of the province have been the subject of much litigation. By the treaty of Utrecht, the river Oayapoek, Wiapoc, or Vincent Pinzon, was named as the common limit between Portuguese and French Guiana; and the fort of St. Louis, situated on its northern margin, was the most southern establishment of what was

* Southey, vol. iii. p. 729.

called Equinoctial France. By the treaty of Amiens, the Aguary (or Arawary), which discharges itself nearly 200 miles to the south-east, was made the limit; the line of demarcation being drawn from its source westward to the Branco, and the navigation was to be common to both nations. But by the treaty of 1817, Cayenne, which had been taken possession of by the Portuguese in 1809,* was restored to France, and the Wiapoc was again made the boundary. "To prevent all further cavil, its mouth was stated to be between the fourth and fifth degrees of north latitude, and in long. 322° east of the island of Ferro. From thence, the line of demarcation was to be in conformity to the treaty of Utrecht."† Where French Guiana terminates towards the west, the Brazilian territory borders on Colombia. The equinoctial line was their original boundary; but the settlements on the Rio Negro extend as high as the fourth parallel of north latitude.

Here we bring to a close our account, necessarily imperfect, of the empire of Brazil. The wish not to exceed the limits originally proposed to ourselves, has compelled us to omit many details relating to the various tribes of aborigines; but a future opportunity will present itself of taking, with more advantage, a general and comparative view of their respective physiological and moral characteristics.‡ What further political changes the empire may undergo, is a matter of trifling moment, compared with the progress of that wonderful social revolution which has

* See vol. i. p. 60, where, for 1819 read 1809.

† Southey, vol. iii. p. 691.

‡ It was intended, more particularly, to notice Dr. Von Spix's visit to the Coroado Indians on the river Xipoto; but it is probable that the sequel to their personal narrative, which we look for with much eagerness, will embrace further details respecting the native tribes, as well as throw much light on the territory bordering on the Amazons.

converted the swamps and forests of the wild hunter into rich pastures, and cultured plains, and busy villages. It is curious to retrace the steps of this process. The Paulistas were the pioneers who first broke and fought their way into the innermost recesses of the Continent, hunting, not for food, for pleasure, or for gold, but for men—for slaves. The discovery of the mines wakened a new passion, and to the mania of gold-hunting, we may certainly ascribe the colonisation of three-fourths of the interior, as well as the little trade which existed up to the close of the last century. In the mean time, the Jesuits were extending the boundaries of civilised society, and laying the foundations of a future nation. Whatever ulterior views the heads of the order may have entertained, their policy was in this instance most beneficent; and, compared with either the other monastic orders, or with the Spanish and Portuguese conquerors of America, they appear in the light of heroic and disinterested philanthropists. When we consider, however, how little, after all, was the knowledge which they communicated to their converts, how very nearly allied to heathenism was the Christianity they taught, and how their system would have condemned their subjects to perpetual childhood,—we need not deeply regret the overthrow of the singular and formidable *hierocrasy* which they were silently erecting. Bonaparte did more for Brazil, although unintentionally, and by an act of unprovoked aggression, when his troops entered Lisbon, than all that the Jesuits were able to accomplish. From that moment, it virtually ceased to be a colony, and with the opening of its ports, a thousand avenues were thrown open to civilisation. When the Jesuits fell, as, at the death of a magician, all his spells are said to be reversed, all his enchantments are broken, so, the effects of their labours melted away, and have left few traces behind. They built upon the sand. The new ideas, new wants, new

stimulants to industry, which commerce introduces, have a permanent influence on society. When the Indians were taught to cultivate mandioc and *matte*, an important step was taken, because it was a first step from barbarism; but, without the stimulus of commerce, industry soon languishes, invention is at a stand, and civilisation seldom advances beyond its infant state. To the merchants of Great Britain, Brazil is chiefly indebted for its growing importance and rapidly extending population. From on board an English man of war the country received its sovereign; to the bravery of a gallant English admiral, its emperor is indebted for the present security of the northern part of his dominions; to the high example of England, it owes its constitutional freedom:—what remains but that the moral influence of the laws and religion of England should extend itself over this fairest portion of the western hemisphere?

BUENOS AYRES.

BUENOS AYRES.

[A city, with an extensive territory, situated in latitude 34° 36′ 28″ south; longitude 57° 24′ west. Formerly the capital of the viceroyalty of the same name; bounded, on the east, by Brazil and the Atlantic; on the west, by Peru and Chili; on the north, by a desert country inhabited by savages; on the south, by Patagonia.]

THE territory on both sides of the vast estuary of the Plata, was, till lately, comprehended within the province of the same name, which formed one of the five governments included in the Spanish viceroyalty of Buenos Ayres. The whole of the country distinguished by the names of the Entre Rios and the Banda Oriental, with the towns of Monte Video and Maldonado on the eastern shores of the Plata, as well as Santa Fe, belonged to this province, which bore indiscriminately the names of the river and of the capital. The other provinces of the viceroyalty were, Paraguay, of which the chief town is Assumption; Tucuman, having for its chief towns, San Jago del Estero and Cordova; Los Charcos or Potosi, —the chief towns, La Plata, Potosi, Santa Cruz de la Sierra, and La Paz; and Chiquitos or Cuzco, the chief towns of which are Mendoza and San Juan de la Frontera. This immense territory, extending upwards of 1,600 miles in a direct line from Cape Lobos in latitude 35° 1′ south, to the most northern settlements on the Paraguay, and, in breadth, from Cape St. Anthony to the Cordilleras, nearly a thousand,—forms one vast plain, nearly a parallelogram, shut in by the mountains of Brazil and the Cordilleras of Peru and Chili. Towards the north, a tract of moun-

tainous country branches from both those ranges, dividing the heads of the streams which flow southward into the Plata, from those which ultimately form the Oronoco and the Amazons; while the western and southern parts, descending by gradual slopes, run into extensive marshy plains, which extend to the foot of a side branch of the Cordilleras of Chili. The greater part of this area may be considered as the basin of the Paraguay, which runs nearly through the centre of South America, from north to south, as the Missisippi does through the North American continent; receiving on the left, from the mountains of Brazil, the two great streams of the Parana and the Uruguay, and on the right, the Pilco Mayo, the Rio Verde, and the Salado, which flow down the eastern declivity of the Andes.* The uniform level of this plain is rarely interrupted by hills of a greater elevation than 500 feet above their base; and it has been calculated by barometrical observations, that the Paraguay, in its progress southward, does not fall more than a foot in perpendicular height, between the eighteenth and twenty-second parallels of south latitude. In consequence of the flatness of the country, the rains which fall upon the Cordilleras are stopped when they descend into the plains; and these mountain rivulets, instead of being collected into rivers, are either gradually evaporated, or are formed into extensive periodical lakes. Of these the celebrated Lake Xarayes, so called from the principal tribe which inhabited those parts, is the largest, extending upwards of 300 miles in length, with an average breadth of 120 miles.† Of the same description is that of Agua-

* See Brazil, p. 127 of the present volume.

† This vast tract of inundated country was called by the Paulistas, *pantanaes*, or flooded savannahs. "These plains were in flower (*florentes*), as they termed it, in June; by which is meant, that the waters are then so deep that it is no longer necessary to

racaty in latitude 25°, that of Nehembucu in latitude 27°, and all those which lie to the east of the Paraguay. There are others which stagnate in extensive flats, and being of little depth, are spread over a great extent of ground. To these central regions, the immense opening of the Rio de la Plata has been styled a magnificent portal. The total population of the viceroyalty has never been satisfactorily ascertained. Azara states the population of Paraguay at 97,500, and that of the province of Buenos Ayres at 170,000. M. Humboldt estimates the Spanish and Creole population of the viceroyalty at 1,100,000, which excludes Indians and slaves. Another account makes the total population of this immense tract of country amount to two millions. This estimate takes in the Entre Rios and Banda Oriental.* But the fact is, that no data exist for an accurate estimate.

The viceroyalty of Buenos Ayres no longer exists; and, of the province of Rio de la Plata, all the territory on the eastern shore, comprehending an extent of not less than 70,000 square miles, has been annexed to the empire of Brazil. The unsettled political condition of the northern part, renders it doubtful what may ultimately be the line of demarcation in that direction. Under these circumstances, we have decided on giving a description of the city and immediate vicinity of Buenos Ayres, as completing our account of the shores of the Plata, reserving for another place a fuller description of this and the other provinces of Spanish South America.

seek out the vein of the river, but they may navigate boldly in any direction." Southey, vol. i. p. 141. But, at other times, the lake is so shallow that it is not navigable in any part except by canoes or rafts.

* These were computed to contain 50,000 souls. Monte Video alone was supposed at one time to contain 30,000 inhabitants.

The city of Buenos Ayres is situated in a plain on the western shore of the Plata, about 200 miles from its mouth. It received this name from its founder, Don Pedro de Mendoza, in 1534, on account of the salubrity of the climate.* The first settlers were most unfortunate: the town was burnt by the savages, and after suffering the extremities of famine, and every species of wretchedness, the Spaniards, in 1539, abandoned the place. Of three thousand men who left Spain under the command of this adventurer for the conquest of the Plata, not a fourth part reached Assumption, where the remains of the colony were collected. A second armament was sent out, and an attempt was made to rebuild the town in 1542; but the distress occasioned by the hostility of the Indians rendered it abortive, and Buenos Ayres was again abandoned. It was not till 1580, that the Spaniards, having already established themselves at Santa Fe, were able to succeed in their third attempt to found a town on the spot chosen by Mendoza.† The natives, remembering that they had twice demolished the works of the Spaniards upon that ground, once more attacked it, and set fire to the tents and temporary huts of the settlers; but their leader was slain, and they were routed. Before they were in a condition to renew the attack, the town was well garrisoned and sufficiently fortified against such enemies. Their leader was slain, and they were totally defeated.

* Sancho del Campo, Mendoza's admiral, is said to have occasioned the name, by his exclamation on landing: "*Que buenos ayres son los de este suelo!*" Southey, vol. i. add. notes. Olinda and Maranham are said to have derived their names from similar accidents. See p. 226 and 278 of the present volume.

† The history of this part of South America, Mr. Southey observes, differs from that of any other colony in one remarkable circumstance; the first permanent settlement was formed in the heart of the country, and the Spaniards colonized from the interior towards the sea.

"The city immediately began to prosper; and the ship which sailed for Castile with tidings of its re-foundation, took home a cargo of sugar and the first hides with which Europe was supplied from the wild cattle which now began to overspread the open country, and soon produced a total change in the manners of all the adjoining tribes." About thirty years later, not fewer than a million of cattle, it is said, were driven from the country about Santa Fe into Peru; so rapidly had they multiplied upon the boundless plains of Tucuman and the Plata.*

In 1620, Buenos Ayres had attained sufficient importance to be erected into a bishopric.† Monte Video, Maldonado, and the other towns of the Banda Oriental, were included in its diocese. In 1700, its inhabitants had increased to 16,000. In 1778, the provinces of Buenos Ayres (or Rio de la Plata), Paraguay, Tucuman, Los Charcos and Chiquito, which had hitherto been subordinate to the jurisdiction of the viceroy of Peru, were erected into a separate viceroyalty, of which Buenos Ayres was made the capital. The new commercial regulations adopted at the same time, contributed not a little to promote the rising prosperity of this important colony.

The earliest traders to America, seeking nothing but gold and silver, attached little value to countries not abounding with the precious metals. "Apprehensive," we are informed, "lest commodities might be introduced into Peru by way of Buenos Ayres, and that this might prejudice the sale of the cargoes of the fleets and galleons which they sent to Panama, they solicited and obtained from the government the prohibition of every kind of

* Southey, vol. i. pp. 68, 135, 366; vol. iii. p. 376. Long before this time (1580), therefore, cattle must have been introduced into this part of South America, though by whom and at what period is unknown.

† Assumption had been created an episcopal city in 1547.

commerce by the Rio de la Plata. Those who were most affected by this measure, strongly remonstrated; and, in 1602, they were permitted to export for six years, in two vessels belonging to themselves, and on their own account, a certain quantity of flour, tallow, and jerked beef, but to no other ports than those of Brazil and Guinea. When the term of this permission had expired, an indefinite prolongation of it was solicited, with an extension to all kinds of merchandise, and to the Spanish ports. This application was vehemently opposed by the consulates of Lima and Seville; nevertheless, in 1618, the inhabitants of the shores of the Rio de la Plata were authorised to fit out two vessels, not exceeding one hundred tons burden each. Several other conditions were imposed on them, and, to prevent any traffic with the interior of Peru, a custom-house was established at Cordoba del Tucuman, where a duty of fifty per cent was exacted on all imposts. This custom-house was also designed to prevent the transmission of gold and silver from Peru to Buenos Ayres, even in payment for the mules furnished by the latter place. When the term of this permission had expired, it was prolonged for an indefinite period by an order of 1622; and, with a view to promote the prosperity of the country, a royal audience was established at Buenos Ayres in 1665, but was abolished as useless in 1672. Such was the general state of things, though individuals from time to time received licenses to ship off cargoes of goods, till 1778, when the Rio de la Plata was thrown open to traffic of every kind, and even with the interior of Peru. Previously to that date, no more than twelve or fifteen registered vessels were engaged in the colonial trade of all Spanish South America; and these seldom performed more than one voyage in three years. In 1796, sixty three vessels from Old Spain alone arrived in the single port of Buenos Ayres, with cargoes

valued at nearly three millions of piasters; and fifty one sailed from it for the mother country, fourteen to the Havannah, and eleven to the coast of Africa. The value of the exports was about five millions and a half of piasters, including upwards of four millions in gold and silver.

"In the succeeding years, the hostilities between Great Britain and Spain produced a material change in the state of this colony; and such was the consequent stagnation of trade, that the warehouses of Buenos Ayres and Monte Video were filled with hides and other native productions, while many kinds of European goods rose to exorbitant prices, or were not to be procured at any rate. The people of the United States of America wisely availed themselves of this situation of affairs, and, by means of a contraband traffic, carried on with the connivance of the Spanish government, they continued to supply the inhabitants of these provinces with European commodities, and to take the native productions in return, till the fortune of war placed Buenos Ayres for a short time in the hands of the British."*

Buenos Ayres surrendered to the British forces under the command of Sir Home Popham and General (now Lord) Beresford, on the 28th of June, 1806. The inactivity and incapacity of the viceroy, the Marquis de Sobre Monte, are severely censured by Dean Funes, the historian of Buenos Ayres; and it does not, in fact, appear, that he made any attempt to defend this important city against the small British force, or to wrest it from the possession of the conquerors.† "This honour was reserved for Don

* Vidal's Illustrations of Buenos Ayres, folio. (1820.) pp. xix.-xxi.

† From Sir Home Popham's despatch, inserted in the London Gazette of September 13, 1806, it appears that the troops landed about twelve miles from Buenos Ayres, without the least opposition. They consisted of the detachment of his Majesty's troops from the Cape, and that from St. Helena, with the marine battalion under the orders of Captain King of his Majesty's ship the Diadem, which was partly composed of seamen "trained for the

Santiago Liniers, a Frenchman by birth, who had commanded one of the Spanish ships of war on this station.

duty, and dressed in an appropriate uniform." The total number, including officers, is said to have been less than 1650 men, and two six-pounders and two howitzers formed their whole artillery. The Spaniards were 2,000 strong, chiefly cavalry, with eight field-pieces; but scarcely had the 71st regiment reached the bottom of the heights on which they were posted, than, not being willing to await their nearer approach, the enemy fled with precipitation. The next day, General Beresford learned that the troops had deserted the city. The whole of the British loss in killed, wounded, and missing, is stated to have been, one officer missing; one officer, one serjeant, and ten rank and file wounded; one rank and file killed. Fortunate, however, as was the issue in the first instance, it was a rash and unauthorised enterprise, undertaken in utter ignorance of the country, and reflecting little credit on its originators. In the council of war which decided on the attack, General Beresford judiciously advised proceeding in the first instance against Monte Video, a much superior fort, and a more tenable position; but he was overruled by the commodore and a large majority. The folly of attempting to retain possession of the capital of a hostile population with such a force, was soon conspicuous. "The public authorities and the commercial inhabitants of Buenos Ayres," says a competent witness, "very soon understood the amount of that force which had subdued them, and that the chiefs of the expedition were vested with no power either to pledge the protection or guarantee of their own government to a new dynasty, or to hold out any permanent melioration of their condition, or any fixed specific engagement on which they could confidently rest their future hopes. The only solid or intermediate remedy they could offer, until they received instructions from home, was to reduce the former duties of 34½ upon exports and imports, to 12½, and to permit a free trade to the port.

"But an early knowledge of our numbers, so totally inadequate even to the purpose of self-defence, far less to dictate laws to them, excited the magistracy to political intrigue for the subversion of our power, in the very first stage of its existence, by their official sway over the popular impulse, and by deeply concerted plans, widely ramified through various members of the church, as well as of the secular orders. The better-informed too were early apprised, and it made a powerful impression upon them, that the expedition had originated with an individual, and that they could expect but few confirmations to promises made them from our legislature, thus pronounced from the mouth of an unauthorised organ. As the Audiencia had constitutionally succeeded to the

This officer, in the absence of the viceroy, who had retired to Cordoba, one hundred and sixty leagues distant from the capital, put himself at the head of all the troops he could muster on both banks of the Plata, and, on the 12th of August, attacked the city at different points with such success, that the British general was obliged to surrender himself and all his troops as prisoners of war. This fortunate result occasioned the first step to that revolution which has since separated these provinces from the mother country; for the people of Buenos Ayres, indignant at the conduct of their viceroy, insisted on investing their deliverer with the supreme civil and military authority, with the title of captain general."

In the mean time, reinforcements arrived from the Cape of Good Hope, from whence the original expedition had been fitted out; and Sir Home Popham, after making an unsuccessful attempt on Monte Video, took possession of Maldonado. The British Government, unwilling to relinquish the important commercial advantages which the possession of the banks of the Plata seemed to promise, now prepared an armament for their effectual reduction. In February 1807, Monte Video was taken by storm by

supreme direction of public affairs by the self-abdication of the viceroy, its duties, as well as those of the other departments, were allowed their uncontrolled exercise, by the terms of the capitulation, with the exception that General Beresford, according to the late system, should sit in the character of its president, and as the representative of his sovereign. Its sittings were few while we held the place, and at none did that officer assume the dignity.

"To cover our own weakness, rations were demanded beyond our real wants; but our guards being paraded every morning, and marched off from the grand square, on which occasions a large assemblage convened, amongst whom were officers in disguise, by counting off the strength of each, and ascertaining the different posts of duty, they were of course, in less than a week, perfect masters of our total effective returns, together with the most vulnerable points in the city which they respectively occupied."—*Gillespie's Gleanings and Remarks*, pp. 55, 6.

the forces under Sir Samuel Auchmuty. General Whitelocke arrived at the head of a formidable armament in the May following; and on the 15th of June, a further reinforcement was received under General Crawford. With this force, amounting to 8000 men, it was now resolved to proceed immediately against Buenos Ayres. But no sooner had they entered the place, than they were assailed from all quarters, with a commanding and superior fire of grape and musquetry. The streets were intersected by deep ditches, secured by cannon, which poured upon the assailants an incessant and destructive fire; while, from the windows and tops of the houses, they were exposed to a galling fire of musquetry, to hand-grenades, bricks, and stones. It now appeared, that the expedition had been planned in utter ignorance of the nature as well of the country as of the people; and nothing could be more miserably conducted. The cool, determined valour of the British troops, and the energy manifested by the leaders of the several columns, in the memorable attack of the 5th of July, were thwarted by the imbecility and cowardice of the commander-in-chief. About a third of the British army were either killed, wounded, or captured, without any material advantage being gained; and, on the next day, an armistice was concluded, which issued in a convention, by which it was agreed, that the British should evacuate the Plata in two months, and that all prisoners taken on both sides should be restored. By this ignominious capitulation, Monte Video, which might have been safely maintained against any enemy, and which would have afforded a secure *depôt* for our manufactures, was also lost.

Mr. Mawe, who accompanied the commissary-general of this expedition, states the population of the city and its immediate suburbs, at this period, at upwards of 60,000 souls, of whom he supposes the legitimate Euro-

pean Spaniards to form about 3000. He divides the inhabitants into the following classes:—

"The first which comes under consideration, is the commercial class. Every person belonging to it, from the huckster at the corner of the street, to the opulent trader in his warehouse, is dignified by the appellation of merchant; yet, few individuals among them can lay just claim to that title, as they are wanting in that practical knowledge so essential in commercial dealings. They are averse to all speculation and enterprise. The common routine of their business is, to send orders to Spain for the articles they need, and to sell by retail, at an exorbitant profit: beyond this, they have hardly a single idea, and it has been said, that their great reason for opposing a free trade with foreign nations, is a consciousness of their own mercantile inexperience. The more considerable houses are almost all branches of some European establishment; few of the Creoles have any regular trade. Those among them, however, who engage in it, are much more liberal in their transactions than the old Spaniards, and are observed to make less rapid fortunes; for their manly and independent character makes them spurn a miserable economy, and disdain to assume that church-going hypocrisy which must be practised twice or thrice a-day by those who would enrich themselves through the patronage of the opulent families. Among the inferior tradesmen, those who gain most, are the *pulperos*, the warehousemen, and the shopkeepers. The *pulperos* retail wine, brandy, candles, sausages, salt, bread, spices, wood, grease, brimstone, &c. Their shops (*pulperias*) are generally lounging-places for the idle and dissipated of the community. In Buenos Ayres, there are about seven hundred of them, each more or less in the interest of some richer individual. The warehousemen sell earthen and glass ware, drugs, various articles of consumption, and some goods of home-manu-

facture, wholesale and retail. The shopkeepers amount to nearly six hundred in number; they sell woollen cloths, silks, cotton goods of all sorts, hats, and various other articles of wearing apparel. Many of them make considerable fortunes, those especially who trade to Lima, Peru, Chili, or Paraguay, by means of young men whom they send as agents or factors. There is another description of merchants, if such they may be called, who keep in the back-ground, and enrich themselves by monopolising victuals, and by forestalling the grain brought to market from the interior, much to the injury of the agricultural interest.

"The second class of inhabitants consists of the proprietors of estates and houses. They are in general Creoles, for few Europeans employ their funds in building, or in the purchase of land, until they have realised a fortune to live upon, which commonly takes place when they are far advanced in life, so that their establishments pass immediately into the hands of their successors. The simple landholders derive so little revenue from their possessions, that they are generally in debt to their tradesmen; their gains are but too commonly engrossed by the monopolists, and having no magistrate to represent them, they find themselves destitute of effectual resources against wrong and extortion. So defective and ill-regulated are the concerns of agriculture in this country, that the proprietor of an estate really worth 20,000 dollars, can scarcely subsist upon it.

"Under the class of landed proprietors, I may reckon the cultivators, here called *quinteros* or *chacareros*, who grow wheat, maize, and other grain. These men are so depressed and impoverished, that, notwithstanding the importance of their calling, and the public usefulness of their labours, they are ranked among the people of least consequence in society.

"The third class is composed of handicraftsmen, such as masons, carpenters, tailors, and shoemakers, who, although they work hard and receive great wages, seldom realise property. The journeymen are usually people of colour; the masters, for the most part, Genoese, and universally foreigners; for the Spaniards despise these trades, and cannot stoop to work along with negroes or mulattoes. Many of the lower orders derive subsistence from these and other employments of a similar nature: there are lime-burners, wood-cutters, tanners, curriers, &c. The free porters constitute a numerous body of men; they ply about the streets to load and unload carts, and carry burthens, but they are so idle and dissolute, that no man can depend on their services for a week together: when they have a little money, they drink and gamble, and when pennyless, they sometimes betake themselves to pilfering. These habits have long rendered them a public nuisance, but no corrective measures have hitherto been taken, nor does there appear, on the part of the higher orders, any disposition to reform them.

"Persons employed in public offices may be comprehended under the fourth class. The best situations under Government are held by native Spaniards; those of less emolument by Creoles: the former are regarded as mere sinecures, and the persons enjoying them, are considered as in no way serviceable to the community, except by spending their large salaries within it.

"The fifth class is the militia or soldiery. Previously to the invasion of the English, the officers were not much noted for military science, or for that ardour which leads to the acquisition of it: their chief ambition was to obtain commands in towns and villages, especially those on the Portuguese frontier, where they might enrich themselves by smuggling. The privates were ill-disciplined, badly dressed, and badly paid. The effective force which the

crown of Spain maintained in these possessions, was, one regiment of the line, which was to consist of 1,200 men, but was reduced to less than half; one regiment of dragoons, amounting to 600; two of cavalry, called *blandengues*, 600 each; and one or two companies of artillery. With the exception of the *blandengues*, all the troops were originally sent from the Peninsula; but, not having for the last twenty years been recruited from thence, their ranks were gradually filled by natives. By eminence they were called veterans, but they have been of late disbanded, and their officers have passed to the command of the new corps which were formed on the English invasion. The force of these corps may be estimated at nine thousand men.

"The sixth class is the clergy, in number about a thousand. The seculars are distinguished by their learning, honour, and probity, from the friars, who are in general so grossly ignorant and superstitious, that they render no real service to the public in any way, but rather tend to disturb the minds of the honest and well-disposed.

"Every observation I was able to make, gave me a favourable idea of the general character of the people; they are tractable, prudent, and generous; and doubtless, had they been under a milder and more beneficent government than that of the Spaniards, they might have become a model to other colonies; but it is lamentable to add, that, in point of morality, they cannot be considered as much superior to the other inhabitants of America."

Such was the state of Buenos Ayres, according to this traveller, in 1807. The unprincipled invasion of the mother country by the French, and the captivity of the royal family, were not known at Buenos Ayres till towards the end of July 1808, when an emissary from Napoleon arrived with despatches for the captain-general, in whom now centred both the military and the judicial

supremacy. Liniers, we are told, assembled the principal civil officers; and in their presence, the letters brought by the envoy were opened and read. According to Dean Funes, it would be impossible to communicate a just idea of the indignation produced in this gallant Frenchman by a proceeding which tended to make him an accomplice in this most execrable villany. It may be questioned, however, whether he was not previously aware of their contents; and the indignant exclamations with which he is said to have interrupted the perusal of the despatches, prove nothing. Other accounts exhibit his conduct as equally hollow and vacillating, his sole object being the maintenance of his own power. Thus, he is said to have disregarded the peremptory orders previously received from the council of the Indies, to proclaim Ferdinand as the successor of his captive father, and to have affected, at one time, to advocate the pretensions of the Queen of Portugal and the Brazils, who made a tender of her royal protection to the good people of Buenos Ayres. As a proof of his want of firmness, it is alleged, that, when summoned by General Whitelocke to surrender Buenos Ayres, he would certainly have acceded, had he not been strenuously opposed by General Elio, the governor of Monte Video.* However this may have been, the French emissary was ordered to re-embark immediately, and Ferdinand VII. was proclaimed with great rejoicings. Soon after, a new central junta, elected under the influence of Elio, proceeded to depose Liniers, and to banish him to Cordoba as a traitor to the state. Elio was placed at the head of the army, and the Marquis Cisneros was chosen as viceroy in the summer of 1809.

The harsh proceedings of the new viceroy, which first kindled the spirit of independence, are said to have been

* Gillespie, pp. 301-4.

adopted in strict compliance with orders from Spain. The deportation of some suspected citizens to Europe, and the imprisonment of others, excited a strong popular ferment, which, at length, on the arrival of disastrous news from the mother country, broke out into tumult. A number of brave men, says Dean Funes, secretly united themselves for the purpose of extirpating tyranny, and, at the risk of their tranquillity, fortunes, and life, formed the plan of the revolution which followed. "In the re-conquest of Buenos Ayres, by expelling the English, we had made trial of our strength, and became convinced that we might now safely cast off the leading-strings of infancy. We believed that this was the time to shake off the authority of a decrepid and tyrannical mother. We were also impelled to this measure from its appearing probable that Napoleon would render permanent the government he had established in Spain." Towards the end of May 1810, the timid Cisneros found it necessary, in order to restore tranquillity to the city, to summon a deliberative assembly, consisting of the principal inhabitants, who, as organs of the people, proceeded to elect an executive body under the title of "the provisional and governing junta for the provinces of La Plata." This junta, consisting of nine persons, including the president, were duly installed on the 25th of May, and severally took the oaths of allegiance to Ferdinand VII.

The European Spaniards, however, beheld with little complacency this newly awakened energy in a people they had long contemned,—"an energy which menaced them with the deprivation of office and influence." Elio at Monte Video, Concha, the governor of Cordova, the viceroy of Lima, and the governors of Potosi and Charcas, all declared against the revolution, and prepared for a contest with the capital. Liniers raised an army for the same purpose; but, being deserted by his troops, he was taken

in the neighbourhood of Cordova, with several of the principal opposers of the revolution in that quarter, who were all sentenced to death, and, with the exception of Bishop Orellana, executed accordingly. Cisneros and the members of the *audienza*, being discovered to have entered into the plot, were exiled to the Canary Islands. Major-General Cordova, Sans, governor of Potosi, and Nieta, president of Charcas, were shortly after put to death. Elio was the only formidable enemy left. He had been invested with the supreme authority by the regency of Spain, and he denounced the junta as rebels. About this time, the celebrated Don Jose Artigas,* a native of Monte Video, and captain in the royalist troops, having some cause of dissatisfaction with the governor of Colonia, tendered his services to the government of Buenos Ayres, which were readily accepted. The command of the republican troops had devolved on Don Jose Rondeau, a South American officer. Artigas, at the head of his Gauchos, being now joined by Rondeau, they repeatedly defeated the royalists, especially in the battle of Las Piedras, in May 1811, when the Spanish troops defending the Banda Oriental, were made prisoners with their commander. The conquerors, having received reinforcements from Buenos Ayres, then laid siege to Monte Video. Elio, finding himself incapable of making a long resistance, implored succour from the Portuguese government in Brazil. Four thousand men were accordingly sent to his assistance; but, apparently repenting of this application, Elio made proposals of peace to the junta; and, in November 1811, it was agreed that the troops of Buenos Ayres should evacuate the Banda Oriental, and that the Portuguese should retire to their own territory. The treaty was soon broken. Elio had been superseded

* See vol. i. p. 320.

by Don G. Vigodet, who, with a reinforcement of troops from Europe, was prepared to renew the contest. But, in December 1812, the siege was resumed by the united forces of Rondeau and Artigas. At length, the true character of this Gaucho chieftain shewed itself. He quarrelled first with Rondeau, and then with the government of Buenos Ayres, and finally withdrew his partisans. Not satisfied with this, he intercepted the provisions destined for the besieging army; and when the garrison were on the eve of capitulating, a letter from Artigas was intercepted, inviting the governor to put the place under his protection, and to make common cause against Buenos Ayres. Provisions at length becoming scarce in the fortress, after the republicans had defeated a flotilla of the royalists, and blockaded the harbour, the fortress surrendered in June 1814, on condition that the garrison should be allowed to embark for Spain. The prisoners, amounting to 5,500, are said to have been distributed, in disregard of the articles of capitulation, through the interior provinces, Vigodet alone being permitted to embark. Monte Video was, after some months, dismantled, all the stores and artillery being transferred to Buenos Ayres, and the garrison was withdrawn. Artigas immediately occupied it, and was suffered to retain it unmolested. When, at length, the republicans sent some troops to recover the fortress they had so strangely abandoned, Artigas defeated them. This important territory being thus lost alike to the court of Spain and to the government of Buenos Ayres, and in the occupation of a mere barbarian, the fairest possible opportunity was presented to the court of Rio, to put in execution their long cherished project of extending their southern frontier to the Rio de la Plata. Towards the end of 1816, the Portuguese General Lecor, at the head of 10,000 men, entered the Banda Oriental, and notwithstanding some partial advantages gained by

Artigas, they obtained possession of Monte Video in January 1817.

In the mean time, various changes had taken place in the form of government at Buenos Ayres. The executive junta of three, being found unmanageable, was abolished by an assembly convened on the last day of 1813, and the executive power was vested in a supreme director, assisted by a council of seven. This high office was conferred on Don Gervasio Posadas, who resigned it, in January 1815, when he was succeeded by Colonel Alvear. This officer had commanded the army besieging Monte Video at the time of its surrender, General Rondeau being appointed to conduct the war in Peru. After its capitulation, he had been appointed to supersede Rondeau a second time in the command of the army; but, though that general abdicated his authority, the regiments refused to receive Alvear as their commander, and he returned to the capital, where, by his faction, he was created director. This impolitic step produced universal murmurs. Alvear, however, resolved to maintain his authority, having, it was suspected, ulterior views of a traitorous nature. He despatched Colonel Alvarez with a body of troops to oppose Artigas; but, instead of proceeding against him, that officer arrested Alvear, and, being supported by the army and the majority of the inhabitants, compelled him to resign his usurped authority, on which he was allowed to embark in an English frigate.* Rondeau was chosen as his successor, Alvarez being named as his deputy during his absence, subject to the control of a municipal committee. Alvarez, embarrassed by this situation, convoked a new congress of the representatives of the province; but, before it could assemble, he was dispossessed of his autho-

* Alvear is charged with being one of several who encouraged the Brazilian government to take possession of the Banda Oriental.

rity by another party struggle, and Don Ramon Balcarce was appointed supreme director. He, too, was soon removed, and the administration of affairs rested in the hands of a committee, till at length, all parties found it necessary to defer to a sovereign congress of representatives assembled at Tucuman on the 25th of March, 1816, by whom Don Juan Martin de Pueyrredon, a man held in the highest estimation by his countrymen, was elected supreme director. At the same time, a solemn declaration of independence was put forth by the Congress, dated July 9, 1816, in which the nation assumes the style of the United Provinces of South America. From this act, the political existence of the republic may properly be dated. An envoy extraordinary was now despatched to the several courts of Europe, to obtain their acknowledgment of the independence of the state; and the United States of North America lost no time in despatching commissioners to collect such information on the spot, as might guide the decisions of Congress.* The reports of Messrs. Rodney† and Graham, the two gentlemen selected for this mission, were published on their return; and from these documents we obtain some further interesting details respecting the state of society in Buenos Ayres in 1818.

* In an official document of the date of April 1818, placed in the hands of these deputies by the secretary of state, it is mentioned, that, of the fourteen provinces into which the ancient viceroyalty was subdivided, nine were then free, that is, in the hands of the patriots. The territory of the United Provinces is stated to contain 145,000 square leagues, with a population, exclusive of the aborigines, amounting to 1,300,000. That of the capital is estimated at 62,000 souls.

† This gentleman was subsequently appointed minister plenipotentiary of the United States to the government of Buenos Ayres, and died in that city, June 10, 1824. The government ordered him to be interred with military honours, and decreed, as a testimony of the national esteem and gratitude, that a sepulchral monument should be erected over his remains at the public expense.

"The effects of the Revolution are visible in the changes produced in the state of society. The difference in the freedom of acting and thinking, which preceded the revolution, must necessarily be great. The freedom of commerce must have given a spring to exertions of native enterprise and intelligence, while the active scenes of war and politics, for the last ten years, have awakened the genius of the country, which had so long slumbered. The generation now on the stage may almost be said to have been reared under a new order of things. The common stock of ideas among the people has been greatly augmented,—the natural consequence of the important political events which daily transpire, and in which every man, like the citizen of Athens, feels an interest. The newspapers are every where circulated, together with the manifestoes of the government, which is obliged to court the approbation of public opinion on all measures of moment. It is not very unusual for the same countryman, who, a few years ago, never troubled himself about any thing beyond the narrow circle of his domestic concerns, to purchase a newspaper on coming to town as a matter of course, and, if unable to read, to request the first one he meets to do him that favour. The country curates are, moreover, enjoined to read the newspapers and manifestoes regularly to their flocks. The spirit of improvement may be seen in every thing. Even some of those who are under the influence of strong prejudices against the revolution, frequently remark the changes for the better which have taken place. Their habits, manners, dress, and mode of living, have been improved by intercourse with strangers, and the free introduction of foreign customs, particularly English, American, and French. Great prejudices prevail against whatever is Spanish. It is even offensive to them to be called by this name: they prefer to be identified with the aborigines of the country. The

appellation which they have assumed, and in which they take a pride, is that of South Americans.

" A powerful stimulus must necessarily have been given to their industry, by two important circumstances—the diminution in prices of foreign merchandise, and the great increase in value of the products of the country, with the consequent rise of property. Though the grounds in the neighbourhood of cities are highly improved, as I have already stated, agriculture, comparatively speaking, is in a low condition. In general, the lands are badly tilled. The plough is rarely used, and the substitute is a very indifferent one. But, notwithstanding the disadvantages of the present method of culture, I was informed by reputable persons, that the average crop of wheat is not less than fifty bushels per acre in good seasons.

" On the subject of religion, especially, the change in the public mind has been very great. The Catholic faith is established as that of the state, but there are many advocates, both in conversation and in writing, of universal toleration. Some members of congress are said to be strongly in favour of it; but the ignorant and superstitious part of the people, together with the regular clergy, would not be satisfied with such a measure, while the liberality prevailing among the better informed classes, is such as to secure a virtual toleration for the present. Besides, from the circumstance of there being no sects in the country, such a provision may wait the progress of liberality in public opinion. In fact, the human mind has been set free on all matters of a general abstract nature, although the liberty of the press is circumscribed in some degree with respect to strictures on public measures and men, and the established religion; but there is neither inquisition nor previous license. They acknowledge the Pope as a spiritual head merely, and do not think him entitled to any authority to interfere with their

temporal concerns. His Bull in favour of the King of Spain against the colonies, which may be almost regarded as an excommunication, produced little or no sensation.

" The number of monks and nuns was very great in Buenos Ayres, when compared with other portions of the Spanish dominions. They have diminished since the revolution. There was at one time a positive law passed, forbidding any one to become a monk or nun; but they were obliged to repeal it, and it was afterwards passed with some modifications. The restrictions substituted, aided by public opinion, have nearly produced the desired effect. Few of the youth of the country apply themselves to the study of theology, since other occupations, much more tempting to their ambition, have been opened to their choice. Formerly, the priesthood was the chief aim of young men of the best families, who were desirous of distinction; as, in fact, it constituted almost the only profession to which those who had received a liberal education could devote themselves; which will readily account for the circumstance of so many of the secular clergy directing their attention, at present, almost exclusively to politics. The regular clergy, who are not permitted, by the nature of their profession, to take part in the business of the world, or to hold secular offices, are many of them Europeans; but those who are natives, take the same lively interest in passing events, with the other classes of the community.

" They have gone cautiously to work in reforms in the different branches of the municipal laws, and the administration of them. The number of offices has been considerably diminished, and responsibility rendered more direct and severe. The judiciary system has undergone many improvements, and nearly all the leading features of the law, which did not harmonise with the principles of

free government, have been expunged, though some of the former evils still remain. The barbarous impositions on the aborigines have been abolished—the odious alcavala, and other obnoxious taxes, modified, so as to be no longer vexatious—slavery, and the slave trade, forbidden in future—and all titles of nobility prohibited, under the pain of loss of citizenship. The law of primogeniture is also expunged from their system. In the provisional statute, as has already been stated, nearly all the principles of free representative government are recognised; accompanied, it is true, with certain drawbacks, for which they plead the necessity of the times, but which they profess their intention to do away, on the final settlement of the government,—a consummation anxiously desired by all classes of inhabitants. The example of France has warned them not to attempt too much at first: they have followed the plan of the United States in the introduction of gradual reforms, instead of resorting to violent and sudden innovations and revolutions.

"Next to the establishment of their independence by arms, the education of their youth appears to be the subject of the most anxious interest. They complain that every possible impediment was thrown in the way of education previously to the revolution; that, so far from fostering public institutions for this purpose, several schools were actually prohibited in the capital, and the young men were not without restraint permitted to go abroad for their education. There was a college at Cordova, at which those destined for the bar, or the priesthood, completed their studies, upon the ancient monkish principles. Another, called San Carlos (now the Union of the South), had been opened at Buenos Ayres, but was afterwards converted into barracks for soldiers. It is an immense building, more extensive, perhaps, than any which has been dedicated to learning in this country; and

it has lately been fitted up at a very great expense. The school was to have opened in May or June last, on a more modern and liberal plan of discipline and instruction. The library of the state is kept in an adjoining building; it occupies a suite of six rooms, and contains nearly 20,000 volumes, the greater part rare and valuable. It is formed out of the library of the Jesuits, the books collected in the different monasteries, donations from individuals, and an annual appropriation by the government, and contains works on all subjects and in all the languages of the polished nations of Europe. A very valuable addition has been lately made of several thousand volumes, brought to Buenos Ayres by M. Bonpland, the companion of the celebrated Humboldt.

"Besides the university of Cordova, at which there are about 150 students, there are public schools in all the principal towns, supported by their respective corporations. In Buenos Ayres, besides an academy in which are taught the higher branches, and the college before mentioned, there are eight public schools, for whose support the corporation contributes about seven thousand dollars annually; and, according to the returns of last year, the number of scholars amounted to 864. There are five other schools exclusively for the benefit of the poor, and under the charge of the different monasteries. These are supplied with books and stationary at the public expense. There are also parish schools in the country, for the support of which a portion of the tithes has been lately set apart. It is rare to meet with a boy ten or twelve years of age, in the city of Buenos Ayres, who cannot read and write. Besides the scholars thus instructed, many have private tutors. In addition to all this, I must not omit to mention the military academies supported by Government at Buenos Ayres and Tucuman, at which there are a considerable number of cadets.

"There are no prohibited books of any kind; all are permitted to circulate freely, or to be openly sold in the book-stores; among them is the New Testament in Spanish. This alone is a prodigious step towards the emancipation of their minds from prejudices. There are several book-stores, whose profits have rapidly increased; a proof that the number of readers has augmented in the same proportion. There had been a large importation of English books, a language becoming daily more familiar to them. Eight years ago, the mechanical art of printing was scarcely known in Buenos Ayres; at present, there are three printing-offices, one of them very extensive, containing four presses. The price of printing is, notwithstanding, at least three times higher than in the United States; but, as there is no trade or intercourse with Spain, all school books used in the country, some of them original, are published at Buenos Ayres: the business is, therefore, profitable, and rapidly extending. There are many political essays, which, instead of being inserted in the newspapers, are published in loose sheets; there are also original pamphlets, as well as republications of foreign works. The constitutions of the United States and of the different states, together with a very good history of our country, and many of our most important state papers, are widely circulated. The work of Dean Funes, the venerable historian of the country, comprised in three large octavo volumes, considering the infancy of the typographic art in this part of the world, may be regarded as an undertaking of some magnitude.

"There are three weekly journals or newspapers published in the city, which have an extensive circulation through the United Provinces. They all advocate the principles of liberty and republican forms of government, as none other would suit the public taste."*

* Reports on the United Provinces of South America. 8vo. pp. 100—10.

Before Buenos Ayres became the seat of a viceroy, it ranked as the fourth city in South America; but since that period, it has been held second to Lima only. It extends north and south about two miles, including the suburbs, and is in general about half a mile broad,—rather more in the centre. It is regularly built; the streets are straight and broad, unpaved in the middle, but with raised footpaths on each side. The houses are upwards of 6,000 in number. Most of the buildings, public as well as private, were built of mud, till the Jesuits introduced the art of making lime from shells. The architecture of the cathedral and most of the churches is ascribed to them; and about the year 1668, 500 Indians are stated to have been employed for several years, under their inspection, upon the fortifications, port, and cathedral. The latter is a spacious and handsome structure, with a cupola and portico. The interior is profusely decorated with carving and gilding, and the dome is painted, in compartments, with representations of acts of the apostles. The church of the Franciscans and that of the convent of Mercy are next in rank: both have steeples and cupolas nearly in the same style as the cathedral. In the former, there is a painting of the Last Supper, executed by a native artist, one of the Indians of the Reductions, which is considered as having great merit. The frame is composed entirely of feathers of a bright gold colour, so ingeniously put together as to have the appearance of the nicest carving and gilding; nor can the difference be detected except by the touch. The converted Indians have a church on the skirts of the town, dedicated to St. John. There are several convents and nunneries, a foundling hospital, an orphan asylum, and other institutions of a benevolent nature. All these edifices are built of a beautifully white stone found in a plain not far from the city. The fort, which contains the resi-

dence of the supreme director and the government offices, is a square building of brick and stone. The two principal streets are the *Calle della Santa Trinidada* and the *Calle del Victoria.* The former, which faces the grand entrance to the cathedral, runs nearly the whole length of the city, and is occupied by the higher class of inhabitants. Almost every house has a garden both before and behind it. Many have latticed balconies, in which are reared odoriferous shrubs. The interior of the houses is, in general, however, very dirty. In summer, the rooms are covered with fine Indian matting; in winter, with European carpets. Every garden is refreshed by water let in from the Plata, by a kind of sluice made of osiers woven very strong and thick. The water thus admitted, is sent by smaller channels round the beds; and a quantity of it is generally retained in a large basin or reservoir, of which there is one in every extensive garden. The water, when thus retained, is clear and sparkling, but, by its great coldness, is apt, it is said, when drunk, to bring on dangerous disorders.

That quarter of the town which is principally inhabited by mestizoes and negroes, has a very miserable and filthy appearance, and strongly contrasts with the opulence and taste displayed in the other. The *plaza*, or great square, has, on the north side, the back of the cathedral and some good private houses; on the west side, is the *cabildo* or town-hall, a handsome stone edifice erected by the Jesuits; on the east side, is the *Recova*, a range of piazzas 150 yards long and above 20 in width, enclosing a double range of shops, which it was intended to continue along the south side of the square, as soon as funds could be raised, in the place of a range of mean shops. In the centre, is a small obelisk, erected to commemorate the declaration of the national independence: it is called the altar of liberty. The *cabildo* is chiefly used as a

prison, but meetings of the municipality are sometimes held in the upper rooms; and from the balcony, the citizens are harangued on public occasions. In this square, all public processions and exhibitions take place. The display of gold and silver, precious stones, relics, and rarities on religious festivals, is said to outvie the most splendid exhibitions of the kind in the Roman Catholic states of Europe. The *Recova* divides the *plaza* from the market-place. Buenos Ayres is well supplied with excellent butcher's meat, and fish in great abundance and variety; but much better fish might, it is thought, be obtained in deeper water and higher up the river, than the fish-carts to which the nets are attached, can go. Poultry is dear, a couple of fowls selling for as much as an ox. Partridges, with which the market is always plentifully supplied during the first three months after Lent, before the roads become bad, are never taken within forty miles of the city. Armadilloes are brought by the Indians from a distance of forty leagues.* All vegetables are dear, and fruit, except peaches. The almond and plum-tree blossom in this climate, but never bear fruit; the olive thrives; the pears are good, but the cherries worth nothing. There are some apples of a middling quality. All the common vegetables thrive here, except the potatoe, for which the soil is too stiff. Milk is brought in jars from the surrounding farms from one to three miles distant: in quality and price, it is much the same as in London, it being scarcely less difficult to procure it unadulterated. Butter is never made by the natives: that which is denominated *manteca*, is only beef dripping.

Most of the opulent inhabitants have their *quinta* or

* Armadilloes are reckoned among the game of South America, and are considered as a delicacy when fat. Their taste is said to be something between a sucking-pig and a rabbit. They are usually roasted in their armour.

country farm; and there are numbers of these little villas in every direction for two or three miles round the city, where, embowered among orange, lemon, and fig-trees, and covered with vines, they afford a delicious retirement from the excessive heat of summer, and present a striking contrast to the arid plains immediately beyond. Those which are situated on the bank of the Plata, are the most agreeable, though, in general, not so much shaded; but, overlooking the river, in expanse resembling a sea, and having beneath them the most frequented road, they are much more lively, and have a better prospect than those in any other situation. The enclosures are made, in general, with either the aloe or a species of prickly pear, both of which form excellent fences. The former bloom in great beauty every summer, sending up sometimes thirty or forty noble shafts in a line of twice as many yards. The only species of large tree indigenous to this part of the country, much resembles an elm at a distance, but the trunk is only a gigantic stalk, and cannot be called wood. It is named *umbu*, supposed to be a corruption of *embudo*, deceit.*

Buenos Ayres is built upon a bank from fifteen to twenty feet above the river, which is the general level of the country behind it; but, on the border of the river to the south of the city, this bank recedes rapidly, leaving

* "These trees grow to a very great size and in a singular manner, having, in general, immense bases, abruptly receding at a certain height, so as so form a convenient natural seat round the tree. The leaf is long, of a rich green, not unlike the Portugal laurel; but the wood is of such singular texture, that it is difficult to be described. It most resembles the outer part of a cabbage-stalk, and is throughout of the same stringy texture, but without pith, and of a yellow colour. It is unfit for any purpose as timber, but its growth is encouraged for two good qualities,—ornamental appearance and refreshing shade. Here and there, a solitary *umbu* is met with in the plain, where again they are of essential value as land-marks for the traveller."—Vidal, p. 112.

a flat, marshy interval, from a quarter of a mile to four miles in breadth. To the north, the bank does not recede so far, leaving not more than half a mile of low, marshy ground for the space of sixteen miles. At this distance, it again approaches and overhangs the river, as at Buenos Ayres, having on its brow the pretty village of San Isidro, the summer residence of many of the citizens. Two miles further, at a village called the *Punta*, the bank abruptly leaves the river, falling back due west. Below it, as far as the eye can reach, is a flat, swampy country, covered with rushes and thickets of *espinilla* (thorn), a large quantity of which is sent to Buenos Ayres for fire-wood. The land is here a perfect jungle, and affords harbour to ounces. Two miles beyond the *Punta*, on the flat, is the village of Las Conchas, situated on a small stream that falls into the river Luxan, a little before it joins the Plata. To this place vessels of tolerable burden can come; and here, all those which descend the river from Paraguay, discharge their cargoes, which are carted to Buenos Ayres. The reasons for adopting this inconvenient practice, which involves land carriage to so great a distance, is the greater security of the port. At Buenos Ayres, the anchorage is bad and open, so that, in a hard gale, vessels seldom hold their ground, and in rough weather, the small craft are unable to unload. The inner roads are formed by an extensive sand-bank, which forbids the approach of vessels drawing deep water, nearer than within six or eight miles. This harbour, called the *Balisas*, has commonly two fathoms water; but, on account of the bank, even small craft take in only half their loading, before they return to the outer roads, called the *Amarradero*, where there is excellent and safe anchorage. The water at this place is always fresh. Near the centre of the city, a mole has been constructed of rough stone, above 200 yards long by twelve

in width, and six yards high, intended for a landing-place; but the river is so shoal, that boats are seldom able to approach it, and five or six carts are constantly plying for the purpose of landing passengers. Sometimes, these carts have to go out a quarter of a mile; for, with northerly or north-westerly winds, the water is driven out of its shallow bed, so that it has even occurred, that persons have rode out on horseback five miles from shore. "Nay, it is related on respectable authority, that about thirty years ago, during a strong northerly wind, the water disappeared, and left an horizon of mud to the people of Buenos Ayres. Such a circumstance might happen, since the river is here thirty miles across, and has no more than three fathoms water in the deepest part, excepting close to the opposite shore of Colonia, where is a narrow channel of four, five, or six fathoms. A contrary effect is produced by an easterly wind, which, if violent, always raises the water at Buenos Ayres; so that in a strong gale from that quarter, the mole is sometimes covered, with the exception of the extreme point, which is higher than the rest, and has a battery of three guns. Thus, these winds, according to their direction, cause the river to rise or fall perhaps not less than seven feet."* Buenos Ayres has another port, ten leagues to the south-east of the city, called the bay of Barragon, where the king's ships used to lie before the foundation of Monte Video. It is formed by the rivulet of Santiago, which can receive vessels drawing twelve feet water. Here ships, after discharging their cargoes in the roads, wait for their outward lading. The whole navigation

* On one occasion, when none of these winds prevailed, the water is said to have receded three leagues from the shore of Buenos Ayres, and to have remained in this state for a whole day; it then gradually rose to its usual level. No satisfactory reason could be assigned for the phenomenon.—*Vidal*, p. 15.

of the river Plata is extremely dangerous, owing not only to the rocks, banks, and shallows which embarrass the channel, but to the impetuous westerly winds called *pamperos*, which sweeping at intervals over the vast plains of the Pampas, rush down the wide opening of the Plata with extraordinary violence. In consequence of these various dangers, vessels proceeding up the river are accustomed to cast anchorage every night wherever they may have arrived; and in all weathers, it is necessary to advance with the utmost caution. The *pamperos* are generally preceded by a thunder-storm, which gives warning to the mariners to provide for their safety in some of the neighbouring ports.

One of the first objects that strikes the eye of a stranger on landing, is a water-cart. By this clumsy contrivance, consisting of a butt raised upon a rude cart with two wheels eight feet high, drawn by bullocks, the whole city is supplied with this prime necessary. The wells, though numerous, afford nothing but hard, brackish water, unfit for culinary purposes. Owing to the dead level of the country, it must for ever be deprived of running streams, nor could any artificial canal or conduit be executed so as to distribute a supply of water through the country, no part being higher than another. Machinery presents the only means of introducing it into the houses, as the whole of this immense plain is about twenty feet above the level of the river. The soil is a black earth, extremely retentive of water; and wherever the most trifling inequality of surface occurs, the water lodges, and, in winter, forms deep and dangerous quagmires, through which the united strength of two or three teams of oxen is required to draw one cart. These *pantanos*, or bogs, though very narrow, are often several miles in length, and must therefore be crossed by the roads; but, owing to the scarcity of wood as well as of stone, there are no means of building bridges

over them at a distance from the city. Good roads are equally out of the question, as no gravel, not even a pebble of any kind, is to be found on the west bank of the river for one hundred miles from Buenos Ayres in any direction.

The usual mode of travelling is on horseback. Wilcocke, in his History of Buenos Ayres, speaks of covered caravans, drawn by oxen, used in travelling over the Pampas, which, he says, are made almost as commodious as a house, with doors to shut and windows on each side, and mattresses on the floor. The description is such as a savage who had never seen a coach, might give of such a vehicle. Coaches there are in Buenos Ayres, which are let out for journeys, but they are usually drawn by mules, with a horse or a pair of horses as leaders, and both the vehicles and their equipment are a caricature upon posting. The harness is not to be matched, except by that of a French diligence: it generally consists of ropes made of twisted slips of hide. The wheels also require to be strengthened with thongs round the tire and between the spokes, to prevent their being torn to pieces in being dragged through the *pantanos* and summer ruts.* A few British merchants, however, as well as the supreme director, and two or three native families, have modern English carriages.

The immense plains called *pampas*, so often alluded to, are described as presenting a sea of waving grass, extending for nine hundred miles, with few interruptions from wood or any eminence. On these plains, which afford excellent pasture, innumerable herds of cattle rove unvalued and unowned, their hides and tallow alone being

* In the annexed plate, the nature of vehicle, harness, cattle, and driver will at once be seen. The foremost driver is a *Chino* Indian,—a tribe so named from their resemblance to the Chinese.

sought after by Spanish hunters. From the 30th parallel of latitude southward, great numbers of wild horses are met with, the progeny of those imported by the Spaniards. They congregate in herds of several thousands; and one traveller states, that, being in these plains for three weeks, he was continually surrounded by them. Sometimes, they passed by in close troops on full speed, for two or three hours together. At other times, the same district has been passed over, and no horses have been seen. They are said to have a trick, on discovering any tame horses, which they do at a very great distance, of forming in close column, galloping up, and surrounding them; or, perhaps, they will run by their side, caressing them, gently neighing, and finally enticing them away with them. They run with incredible heedlessness, and, when pursued, dash themselves against any object that stands in their way. Astonishing instances of this wildness are seen in dry years, when water is very scarce to the south of Buenos Ayres. They will run all together, as if they were mad, in search of some pond or lake; and, on reaching it, plunge into the mud, and the foremost are trampled to death by those that follow. Azara relates, that he has more than once seen upwards of a thousand carcases of wild horses that had perished in this manner. All of them are of a chesnut or dark-bay colour. The domestic horses are also very numerous, and on that account are most barbarously used. In Buenos Ayres, it is no extraordinary circumstance to see literally a beggar on horseback.

Wild dogs are also very numerous in the Pampas. They are of a large breed, descended, like the wild horses, from domestic animals introduced by the first settlers. They are gregarious, and several will join to attack and pursue a mare or cow, while others kill the foal or calf. In this way they make great havoc. In consequence of their formidable numbers, the government, on one occa-

sion, sent out a party of soldiers to destroy them, who killed a great number; but the ridicule cast on the expedition by the populace, who called the soldiers *mataperros* (dog-killers), prevented a renewal of the attempt.

These open plains are also the haunt of the emu or American ostrich. In parts where these birds are not hunted, they will approach the habitations of man, and are not disturbed at the sight of foot-passengers; but, in the country, where they are objects of pursuit for the sake of their skin and plumes, they are extremely shy. They frequent especially the marshy grounds, either in pairs or in troops of thirty or more. They run with such swiftness that only good horsemen well mounted can overtake them. When caught by means of the balls,* the bird is not to be approached without great caution; for, though it does not strike with its bill, it kicks with great strength, and is said to be capable of breaking a stone. When running at full speed, their wings are stretched out behind: in order to turn, they open one wing, and the wind assists them to wheel about with such rapidity as to throw out their pursuer. The ostrich, when young, is easily domesticated, and will become familiar presently. "They go into all the apartments, walk about the streets, and into the country, sometimes to the distance of a league, and return to their homes. They are full of curiosity, and stop at the windows and doors of houses, to observe what is passing within. They are fed with grain, bread, and other things; they likewise swallow pieces of money, bits of metal, and small stones which they pick up. The flesh of the young birds is tender and well-flavoured, but not that of the old ones. It is believed, that they never drink; they are, however, excellent swimmers, and will cross rivers and lagoons even when not pursued. The number of these

* See vol. i. p. 312.

birds diminishes in proportion as the population increases; for, though it is difficult to kill them with fire-arms, or to run them down on horseback, and impossible to take them with snares, yet, every one is eager to search for their eggs, and to destroy their young."*

These plains are watered by the rivers Saladillo, Hueyque Leuvu, and the first river Desaguadero, all of which flow down the eastern declivity of the Cordillera; but no smaller streams cross the country, and run into these main rivers. On the northern bank of the Saladillo, there are several lakes, bogs, and hollows; and in dry seasons, when grass fails on the shores of the Plata, the cattle of the grazing-farms are driven here for pasture. Between this river and Buenos Ayres, a distance of sixty miles, not a rising ground, nor so much as a tree, breaks the monotony of the dead level. The route to the principal pass over the mountains to Chili, a distance of 200 leagues, lies across these *pampas*; and large convoys of from two to three hundred mules laden with wines, from Mendoza (the head town of the province of Cuyo or Chiquito), continually perform the journey to Buenos Ayres. As, in these trackless plains, there are neither roads nor land-marks, the route is pursued by compass. The Pampas Indians still infest the plains, and troops of them will sometimes attack travellers; but they are at peace with the Spaniards. Their nearest settlement is about twenty-five leagues to the south-west of the capital.

Thus much may suffice for a general description of this singular city, the capital of the new and rising state which has established itself on the western shore of the Plata. Another opportunity will present itself for resuming the history of the noble struggle in which the nations of Spanish America are still engaged, and for entering

* Vidal, pp. 86, 7.

into a fuller description of the other united provinces of the south. The reign of Spain in the new world is past. The spell on which it rested, is broken. The generation that is passing away, might have been again enslaved; the rising one cannot be. Commerce must be annihilated, the progress of education must be stopped, society must retrograde, the last spark of moral light be quenched, and every generous and noble sentiment be suppressed, before nations that have once tasted of liberty, can be brought again to fall down before that most Gothic of despotisms. The Plata shall sooner be laid dry. To the House of Braganza, Brazil owes a debt of gratitude. To Spain, America owes nothing.

END OF BUENOS AYRES.

J. MOYES, GREVILLE STREET, LONDON.

University of California
SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
305 De Neve Drive - Parking Lot 17 • Box 951388
LOS ANGELES, CALIFORNIA 90095-1388
Return this material to the library from which it was borrowed.

G
463

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA